

# STATUTORY COMPILATION

## RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*CURRENT AS OF DECEMBER 2009*

*COMPILED BY*



**AEQUITAS: THE PROSECUTORS' RESOURCE ON VIOLENCE AGAINST WOMEN**

801 PENNSYLVANIA AVENUE NW, SUITE 375 | WASHINGTON, DC 20004

P: (202) 558-0040 | F: (202) 393-1918

[WWW.AEQUITASRESOURCE.ORG](http://WWW.AEQUITASRESOURCE.ORG)

## RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

<b>ALABAMA</b> .....	14
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-60 (2009). DEFINITIONS .....	14
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-61 (2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	14
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-62 (2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	15
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-63 (2009). SODOMY; FIRST DEGREE .....	15
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-64 (2009). SODOMY; SECOND DEGREE.....	15
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-65 (2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT .....	16
ALA. CODE 1975 § 13A-6-65.1 (2009). SEXUAL TORTURE .....	16
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-66 (2009). SEXUAL ABUSE; FIRST DEGREE.....	16
ALA. CODE § 13A-6-67 (2009). SEXUAL ABUSE; SECOND DEGREE.....	17
<b>ALASKA</b> .....	17
ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.410 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE.....	17
ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.420 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	18
ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.425 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	18
ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.427 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE.....	19
ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.432 (2009). DEFENSES.....	19
<b>ARIZONA</b> .....	20
ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1401 (2009). DEFINITIONS .....	20
ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1404 (2009). SEXUAL ABUSE; CLASSIFICATION .....	20
ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1405 (2009). SEXUAL CONDUCT WITH A MINOR; CLASSIFICATION; DEFINITION.....	21
ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1406 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; CLASSIFICATION; INCREASED PUNISHMENT .....	21
ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1407 (2009). DEFENSES.....	22
<b>ARKANSAS</b> .....	23
ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-101 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS.....	23
ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-102 (West 2009). CRIMINALITY OF CONDUCT.....	24
ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-103 (West 2009). RAPE.....	25
ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-124 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	26
ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-125 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	26
ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-126 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	28
ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-127 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE.....	29
<b>CALIFORNIA</b> .....	29
CAL. PENAL CODE § 261 (West 2009). RAPE DEFINED .....	29
CAL. PENAL CODE § 262 (West 2009). RAPE OF A SPOUSE; ELEMENTS; CONDITIONS OF PROBATION; FINES, PAYMENTS, OR RESTITUTION .....	31
CAL. PENAL CODE § 263 (West 2009). RAPE; ESSENTIALS; SUFFICIENCY OF PENETRATION .....	32
CAL. PENAL CODE § 264.1 (West 2009). RAPE OR PENETRATION OF GENITAL OR ANAL OPENINGS BY FOREIGN OBJECT, ETC.; ACTING IN CONCERT BY FORCE OR VIOLENCE; PUNISHMENT	32
CAL. PENAL CODE § 261.6 (West 2009). CONSENT; CURRENT OR PREVIOUS DATING OR MARITAL RELATIONSHIP; ADMISSIBILITY OF EVIDENCE OR BURDEN OF PROOF.....	33

CAL. PENAL CODE § 261.7 (West 2009). EVIDENCE THAT VICTIM REQUESTED THAT DEFENDANT USE CONDOM OR OTHER BIRTH CONTROL DEVICE; CONSENT .....	33
CAL. PENAL CODE § 243.4 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY .....	33
CAL. PENAL CODE § 266c (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL INTERCOURSE, SEXUAL PENETRATION, ORAL COPULATION, OR SODOMY; CONSENT PROCURED BY FALSE OR FRAUDULENT REPRESENTATION WITH INTENT TO CREATE FEAR; PUNISHMENT .....	35
<b>COLORADO</b> .....	36
COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-401 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS.....	36
COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-402 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	37
COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-404 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT.....	39
COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-409 (West 2009). MARITAL DEFENSE .....	40
<b>CONNECTICUT</b> .....	40
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-65 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS.....	40
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-67 (West 2009). AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSES .....	42
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-70 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE: CLASS B OR A FELONY.....	42
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-70A (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE: CLASS B OR A FELONY.....	43
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-70B (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN SPOUSAL OR COHABITING RELATIONSHIP: CLASS B FELONY.....	43
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-71 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE: CLASS C OR B FELONY .....	44
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-72A (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE: CLASS D OR C FELONY .....	45
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-72B (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE WITH A FIREARM: CLASS C OR B FELONY.....	45
CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-73A (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE: CLASS A MISDEMEANOR OR CLASS D FELONY .....	45
<b>DELAWARE</b> .....	46
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 761 (2009). DEFINITIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO SEXUAL OFFENSES.....	46
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 762 (2009). PROVISIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO SEXUAL OFFENSES.....	48
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 773 (2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE; CLASS A FELONY.....	49
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 772 (2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE; CLASS B FELONY .....	50
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 771 (2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE; CLASS B FELONY .....	52
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 770 (2009). RAPE IN THE FOURTH DEGREE; CLASS C FELONY .....	52
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 769 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE FIRST DEGREE; CLASS D FELONY .....	53
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 768 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE SECOND DEGREE; CLASS F FELONY .....	54
DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 767 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE THIRD DEGREE; CLASS A MISDEMEANOR .....	54
<b>DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA</b> .....	54
D.C. CODE § 22-3002 (2009). FIRST DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE.....	54

D.C. CODE § 22-3003 (2009). SECOND DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE .....	55
D.C. CODE § 22-3004 (2009). THIRD DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE .....	55
D.C. CODE § 22-3005 (2009). FOURTH DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE .....	56
D.C. CODE § 22-3006 (2009). MISDEMEANOR SEXUAL ABUSE .....	56
D.C. CODE § 22-3007 (2009). DEFENSE TO SEXUAL ABUSE .....	56
D.C. CODE § 22-3019 (2009). NO SPOUSAL IMMUNITY FROM PROSECUTION.....	57
<b>FLORIDA</b> .....	57
FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.005 (West 2009). LEGISLATIVE FINDINGS AND INTENT AS TO BASIC CHARGE OF SEXUAL BATTERY.....	57
FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.011 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY .....	57
FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.023 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY BY MULTIPLE PERPETRATORS; RECLASSIFICATION OF OFFENSES.....	60
FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.021 (West 2009). IGNORANCE OR BELIEF AS TO VICTIM’S AGE NO DEFENSE .....	60
<b>GEORGIA</b> .....	60
GA. CODE ANN. § 16-6-1 (West 2009). RAPE .....	60
GA. CODE ANN. § 16-6-2 (West 2009). SODOMY; AGGRAVATED SODOMY .....	61
GA. CODE ANN. § 16-6-5.1 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	62
<b>HAWAII</b> .....	63
HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-700 (2009). DEFINITIONS OF TERMS IN THIS CHAPTER .....	63
HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-730 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN FIRST DEGREE .....	66
HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-731 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	66
HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-732 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	67
HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-733 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE.....	68
<b>IDAHO</b> .....	68
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6101 (2009). RAPE DEFINED.....	68
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6102 (2009). PROOF OF PHYSICAL ABILITY.....	69
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6103 (2009). PENETRATION .....	69
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6104 (2009). PUNISHMENT FOR RAPE.....	69
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6107 (2009). RAPE OF SPOUSE.....	69
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6108 (2009). MALE RAPE.....	69
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6608 (2009). FORCIBLE SEXUAL PENETRATION BY USE OF FOREIGN OBJECT .....	70
IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6109 (2009). PUNISHMENT FOR MALE RAPE.....	70
<b>ILLINOIS</b> .....	70
720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-12 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS .....	70
720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-13 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	72
720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-14 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED CRIMINAL SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	73
720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-15 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ABUSE.....	74
720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-16 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED CRIMINAL SEXUAL ABUSE.	75
720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-17 (West 2009). DEFENSES .....	76
<b>INDIANA</b> .....	77
IND. CODE ANN. § 35-42-4-1 (West 2009). RAPE .....	77

IND. CODE ANN. § 35-42-4-8 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY .....	77
IOWA .....	78
IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.1 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE DEFINED .....	78
IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.2 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	78
IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.3 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	79
IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.4 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	79
IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.10 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE--EVIDENCE .....	80
KANSAS .....	80
KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3501 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS.....	80
KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3502 (West 2009). RAPE .....	81
KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3505 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SODOMY.....	82
KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3506 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED CRIMINAL SODOMY .....	82
KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3517 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY .....	83
KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3518 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY .....	83
KENTUCKY .....	83
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.010 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS FOR CHAPTER .....	83
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.020 (West 2009). LACK OF CONSENT .....	85
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.030 (West 2009). DEFENSES .....	85
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.035 (West 2009). NO OFFENSE COMMITTED IF PARTIES MARRIED TO EACH OTHER .....	86
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.040 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	86
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.050 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE.....	86
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.060 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	86
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.070 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	87
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.080 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	87
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.090 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	88
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.100 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE FOURTH DEGREE.....	88
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.110 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	88
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.120 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	89
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.130 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	90
KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.140 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT .....	90
LOUISIANA.....	90
LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:41 (2009). RAPE; DEFINED .....	90
LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:42 (2009). AGGRAVATED RAPE .....	91
LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:42.1 (2009). FORCIBLE RAPE .....	91
LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43 (2009). SIMPLE RAPE .....	91
LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43.1 (2009). SEXUAL BATTERY .....	92
LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43.2 (2009). SECOND DEGREE SEXUAL BATTERY .....	93
LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43.3 (2009). ORAL SEXUAL BATTERY .....	94
MAINE.....	95
ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 251 (2009). DEFINITIONS AND GENERAL PROVISIONS.....	95
ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 253 (2009). GROSS SEXUAL ASSAULT.....	96
ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 255-A (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT.....	99
ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 260 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL TOUCHING.....	101

<b>MARYLAND</b>	<b>103</b>
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-301 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS	103
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-302 (West 2009). CONSTRUCTION OF SUBTITLE	105
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-303 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE	105
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-304 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE	106
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-305 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE	107
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-306 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE	109
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-307 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE	110
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-308 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE FOURTH DEGREE	111
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-309 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE	112
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-310 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE	112
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-311 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE	113
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-312 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE	113
MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW § 3-318 (West 2009). RAPE AND SEXUAL OFFENSE--SPOUSAL DEFENSE	113
<b>MASSACHUSETTS</b>	<b>114</b>
MASS. GEN. LAWS ANN. ch. 265, § 22 (West 2009). RAPE, GENERALLY; WEAPONS; PUNISHMENT; ELIGIBILITY FOR FURLOUGH, EDUCATION, TRAINING OR EMPLOYMENT PROGRAMS	114
MASS. GEN. LAWS ANN. ch. 265, § 13H (West 2009). INDECENT ASSAULT AND BATTERY ON PERSON FOURTEEN OR OLDER; PENALTIES	115
MASS. GEN. LAWS ANN. ch. 272, § 3 (West 2009). DRUGGING PERSONS FOR SEXUAL INTERCOURSE	116
<b>MICHIGAN</b>	<b>116</b>
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520A (West 2009). DEFINITIONS	116
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520B (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN FIRST DEGREE	118
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520c (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN SECOND DEGREE	120
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520d (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THIRD DEGREE	122
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520E (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN FOURTH DEGREE	123
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520G (West 2009). ASSAULT WITH INTENT TO COMMIT CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT	125
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520H (West 2009). CORROBORATION OF TESTIMONY OF VICTIM	125
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520i (West 2009). RESISTANCE BY VICTIM	125
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.158 (West 2009). CRIME AGAINST NATURE OR SODOMY; PENALTY	125

MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.338B (West 2009). GROSS INDECENCY; BETWEEN MALE AND FEMALE PERSONS .....	126
MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520L (West 2009). OFFENSES INVOLVING SPOUSES.....	126
MINNESOTA.....	126
MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.293 (West 2009). SODOMY .....	126
MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.342 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	127
MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.343 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	129
MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.344 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	130
MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.345 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE .....	132
MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.3451 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FIFTH DEGREE .....	134
MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.349 (West 2009). VOLUNTARY RELATIONSHIPS .....	135
MISSISSIPPI .....	135
MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-95 (West 2009). “SEXUAL BATTERY” DEFINED .....	135
MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-97 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY, DEFINITIONS .....	135
MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-99 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY, DEFENSE OF MARRIAGE .....	136
MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-101 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY, PUNISHMENT .....	136
MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-99 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY; DEFENSE.....	137
MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-71 (West 2009). ASSAULT WITH INTENT TO RAVISH .....	137
MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-29-59 (West 2009). SODOMY .....	137
MISSOURI .....	137
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.020 (West 2009). MISTAKE AS TO INCAPACITY OR AGE .....	137
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.023 (West 2009). MARRIAGE AS DEFENSE .....	138
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.030 (West 2009). RAPE.....	138
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.023 (West 2009). MARRIAGE TO VICTIM, AT TIME OF OFFENSE, AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSE, FOR CERTAIN CRIMES.....	139
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.032 (West 2009). STATUTORY RAPE, FIRST DEGREE, PENALTIES .....	139
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.034 (West 2009). STATUTORY RAPE, SECOND DEGREE, PENALTY .....	139
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.062 (West 2009). STATUTORY SODOMY, FIRST DEGREE, PENALTIES .....	139
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.064 (West 2009). STATUTORY SODOMY, SECOND DEGREE, PENALTY.....	140
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.040 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	140
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.060 (West 2009). FORCIBLE SODOMY .....	140
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.070 (West 2009). DEVIATE SEXUAL ASSAULT.....	141
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.090 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT IN THE FIRST DEGREE.....	141
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.093 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	141
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.095 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	142
MO. ANN. STAT. § 566.100 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE .....	142
MONTANA .....	142
MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-501 (2009). DEFINITIONS.....	142
MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-502 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	144
MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-503 (2009). SEXUAL INTERCOURSE WITHOUT CONSENT .....	145

<b>MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-511 (2009). PROVISIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO SEXUAL CRIMES</b>	<b>147</b>
<b>NEBRASKA</b>	<b>147</b>
NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-317 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; LEGISLATIVE INTENT	147
NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-319 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; FIRST DEGREE; PENALTY	148
NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-320 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; SECOND OR THIRD DEGREE; PENALTY	148
NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-323 (2009). DOMESTIC ASSAULT; PENALTIES	148
<b>NEVADA</b>	<b>149</b>
NEV. REV. STAT. ANN. § 200.364 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS	149
NEV. REV. STAT. ANN. § 200.366 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT: DEFINITION; PENALTIES	149
NEV. REV. STAT. ANN. § 200.373 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT OF SPOUSE BY SPOUSE	151
<b>NEW HAMPSHIRE</b>	<b>151</b>
N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:1 (2009). DEFINITIONS	151
N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:2 (2009). AGGRAVATED FELONIOUS SEXUAL ASSAULT	152
N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:3 (2009). FELONIOUS SEXUAL ASSAULT	154
N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:4 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT	155
N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:5 (2009). SPOUSE AS VICTIM; EVIDENCE OF HUSBAND AND WIFE	156
<b>NEW JERSEY</b>	<b>156</b>
N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-5 (West 2009). PROVISIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO CHAPTER 14	156
N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-1 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS	156
N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-2 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT	157
N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-3 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONTACT	159
<b>NEW MEXICO</b>	<b>159</b>
N.M. STAT. ANN. § 30-9-10 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS	159
N.M. STAT. ANN. § 30-9-11 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL PENETRATION	161
N.M. STAT. ANN. § 30-9-12 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONTACT	162
<b>NEW YORK</b>	<b>163</b>
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.00 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; DEFINITIONS OF TERMS	163
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.05 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; LACK OF CONSENT	163
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.10 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; LIMITATION; DEFENSES	165
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.16 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; CORROBORATION	166
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.20 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT	166
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.25 (McKinney 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE	166
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.30 (McKinney 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE	167
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.35 (McKinney 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE	167
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.40 (McKinney 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ACT IN THE THIRD DEGREE	168
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.45 (McKinney 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ACT IN THE SECOND DEGREE	168
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.50 (McKinney 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ACT IN THE FIRST DEGREE	168
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.52 (McKinney 2009). FORCIBLE TOUCHING	169



N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.53 (McKinney 2009). PERSISTENT SEXUAL ABUSE.....	169
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.55 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	169
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.60 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE.....	170
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.65 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE.....	170
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.65-A (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FOURTH DEGREE .....	170
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.66 (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	171
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.67 (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	171
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.70 (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	171
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.90 (McKinney 2009). FACILITATING A SEX OFFENSE WITH A CONTROLLED SUBSTANCE.....	171
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.91 (McKinney 2009). SEXUALLY MOTIVATED FELONY.....	171
N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.95 (McKinney 2009). PREDATORY SEXUAL ASSAULT.....	172
<b>NORTH CAROLINA.....</b>	<b>173</b>
N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.1 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS .....	173
N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.2 (West 2009). FIRST-DEGREE RAPE .....	173
N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.3 (West 2009). SECOND-DEGREE RAPE .....	174
N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.4 (West 2009). FIRST-DEGREE SEXUAL OFFENSE .....	174
N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.5 (West 2009). SECOND-DEGREE SEXUAL OFFENSE .....	175
N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.5A (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY.....	175
N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.7 (West 2009). INTERCOURSE AND SEXUAL OFFENSES WITH CERTAIN VICTIMS; CONSENT NO DEFENSE.....	175
N.C. GEN. STAT. § 14-27.8 (West 2009). NO DEFENSE THAT VICTIM IS SPOUSE OF PERSON COMMITTING ACT.....	176
<b>NORTH DAKOTA .....</b>	<b>176</b>
N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-02 (2009). DEFINITIONS .....	176
N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-03 (2009). GROSS SEXUAL IMPOSITION--PENALTY .....	177
N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-04 (2009). SEXUAL IMPOSITION .....	178
N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-07 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT.....	178
N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-12 (2009). DEVIATE SEXUAL ACT .....	179
<b>OHIO .....</b>	<b>179</b>
OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.02 (West 2009). RAPE; EVIDENCE; MARRIAGE OR COHABITATION NOT DEFENSES TO RAPE CHARGES .....	179
OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.03 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY.....	181
OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.05 (West 2009). GROSS SEXUAL IMPOSITION.....	183
OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.06 (West 2009). SEXUAL IMPOSITION .....	184
<b>OKLAHOMA .....</b>	<b>185</b>
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1111 (West 2009). RAPE DEFINED .....	185
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1111.1 (West 2009). RAPE BY INSTRUMENTATION.....	186
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1112 (West 2009). AGE LIMITATIONS ON CONVICTION FOR RAPE .....	187

OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1113 (West 2009). SLIGHT PENETRATION IS SUFFICIENT TO COMPLETE CRIME.....	187
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1114 (West 2009). RAPE IN FIRST DEGREE--SECOND DEGREE..	187
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1116 (West 2009). RAPE IN SECOND DEGREE A FELONY.....	188
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1117 (West 2009). COMPELLING WOMAN TO MARRY.....	188
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1118 (West 2009). INTENT TO COMPEL WOMAN TO MARRY.....	188
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1120 (West 2009). SEDUCTION UNDER PROMISE OF MARRIAGE .....	188
OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1121 (West 2009). SUBSEQUENT MARRIAGE AS A DEFENSE .....	189
<b>OREGON.....</b>	<b>189</b>
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.305 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS .....	189
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.315 (West 2009). CAPABILITY TO CONSENT; LACK OF RESISTANCE .....	189
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.325 (West 2009). KNOWLEDGE OF VICTIM'S AGE .....	189
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.345 (West 2009). AGE; DEFENSE .....	190
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.355 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	190
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.365 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE.....	190
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.375 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	190
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.385 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	191
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.395 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	191
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.405 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	191
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.408 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL PENETRATION IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	192
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.411 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL PENETRATION IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	192
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.412 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL PENETRATION; EXCEPTIONS .....	192
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.415 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	193
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.425 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	193
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.427 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	193
OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.445 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT .....	193
<b>PENNSYLVANIA.....</b>	<b>194</b>
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3101 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS .....	194
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3107 (West 2009). RESISTANCE NOT REQUIRED.....	194
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3121 (West 2009). RAPE .....	195
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3122.1 (West 2009). STATUTORY SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	196
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3123 (West 2009). INVOLUNTARY DEVIATE SEXUAL INTERCOURSE .....	196
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3124.1 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	197
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3125 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED INDECENT ASSAULT.....	197
PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3126 (West 2009). INDECENT ASSAULT.....	198
<b>RHODE ISLAND.....</b>	<b>199</b>
R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-1 (2009). DEFINITIONS.....	199
R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-2 (2009). FIRST DEGREE SEXUAL ASSAULT.....	200
R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-3.2 (2009). NECESSITY OF COMPLAINT FROM VICTIM.....	200

R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-4 (2009). SECOND DEGREE SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	201
R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-6 (2009). THIRD DEGREE SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	201
<b>SOUTH CAROLINA .....</b>	<b>201</b>
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-615 (2009). SPOUSAL SEXUAL BATTERY.....	201
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-651 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT: DEFINITIONS .....	202
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-652 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	202
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-653 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE SECOND DEGREE....	203
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-654 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	203
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-656 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT: ASSAULTS WITH INTENT TO COMMIT .....	204
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-657 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT: TESTIMONY OF VICTIM NEED NOT BE CORROBORATED .....	204
S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-658 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT: WHERE VICTIM IS SPOUSE	204
<b>SOUTH DAKOTA.....</b>	<b>204</b>
S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-1 (2009). RAPE DEFINED--DEGREES--FELONY .....	204
S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-2 (2009). SEXUAL PENETRATION DEFINED--ACTS CONSTITUTING SODOMY--MEDICAL PRACTITIONERS EXCEPTED .....	205
S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITH CHILD UNDER SIXTEEN-- FELONY OR MISDEMEANOR.....	205
S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7.2 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITH PERSON INCAPABLE OF CONSENTING--FELONY .....	206
S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7.3 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITH CHILD UNDER SIXTEEN YEARS OF AGE--VIOLATION AS MISDEMEANOR .....	206
S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7.4 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITHOUT CONSENT WITH PERSON CAPABLE OF CONSENTING AS MISDEMEANOR .....	206
<b>TENNESSEE .....</b>	<b>206</b>
TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-501 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS.....	206
TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-502 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED RAPE .....	207
TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-503 (West 2009). RAPE .....	208
TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-504 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY .....	208
TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-505 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY .....	208
<b>TEXAS.....</b>	<b>209</b>
TEX. PENAL CODE ANN. § 21.01 (Vernon 2009). DEFINITIONS.....	209
TEX. PENAL CODE ANN. § 22.011 (Vernon 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	210
TEX. PENAL CODE ANN. § 22.021 (Vernon 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	213
<b>UTAH .....</b>	<b>214</b>
UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-402 (West 2009). RAPE .....	215
UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-402.2 (West 2009). OBJECT RAPE.....	215
UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-403 (West 2009). SODOMY--FORCIBLE SODOMY.....	216
UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-404 (West 2009). FORCIBLE SEXUAL ABUSE.....	217
UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-405 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT--PENALTY .....	218
UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-406 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSES AGAINST THE VICTIM WITHOUT CONSENT OF VICTIM--CIRCUMSTANCES .....	220
<b>VERMONT.....</b>	<b>221</b>

VT. STAT. ANN. tit 13, § 3251 (2009). DEFINITIONS.....	221
VT. STAT. ANN. tit 13, § 3252 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	222
VT. STAT. ANN. tit 13, § 3253 (2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	223
<b>VIRGINIA .....</b>	<b>224</b>
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-61 (West 2009). RAPE .....	224
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-63.1 (West 2009). DEATH OF VICTIM .....	225
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.1 (West 2009). FORCIBLE SODOMY .....	226
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.2 (West 2009). OBJECT SEXUAL PENETRATION; PENALTY .....	227
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.3 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY; PENALTY.....	228
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.4 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY.....	228
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.4:1 (West 2009). INFECTED SEXUAL BATTERY; PENALTY.....	229
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.5 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED RAPE, FORCIBLE SODOMY, OBJECT SEXUAL PENETRATION, AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY, AND SEXUAL BATTERY .....	229
VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.6 (West 2009). PROOF OF PHYSICAL RESISTANCE NOT REQUIRED .....	230
<b>WASHINGTON.....</b>	<b>230</b>
WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.010 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS .....	230
WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.040 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE.....	232
WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.050 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	232
WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.060 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	233
WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.100 (West 2009). INDECENT LIBERTIES.....	234
<b>WEST VIRGINIA .....</b>	<b>235</b>
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-1 (West 2009). DEFINITION OF TERMS.....	235
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-2 (West 2009). LACK OF CONSENT .....	236
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-3 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	237
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-4 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE.....	237
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-5 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	238
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-7 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	238
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-8 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE.....	239
W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-9 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	239
<b>WISCONSIN .....</b>	<b>239</b>
Wis. STAT. ANN. § 940.225 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	239
<b>WYOMING .....</b>	<b>243</b>
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-301 (2009). DEFINITIONS.....	243
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-302 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE.....	244
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-303 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	244
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-304 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE .....	245
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-306 (2009). PENALTIES FOR SEXUAL ASSAULT.....	245
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-307 (2009). EVIDENCE OF MARRIAGE AS DEFENSE.....	247
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-311 (2009). CORROBORATION UNNECESSARY.....	247
WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-313 (2009). SEXUAL BATTERY .....	247
<b>U.S. TERRITORIES .....</b>	<b>247</b>

<b>AMERICAN SAMOA</b> .....	247
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3601 (2004). DEFINITIONS .....	247
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3602 (2004). DETERMINATION OF MARRIAGE.....	248
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3603 (2004). MISTAKE AS TO INCAPACITY OR AGE .....	248
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3604 (2004). RAPE.....	248
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3610 (2004). SEXUAL ASSAULT.....	249
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3611 (2004). SODOMY.....	249
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3612 (2004). DEVIATE SEXUAL ASSAULT .....	249
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3615 (2004). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	250
AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3616 (2004). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE....	250
<b>GUAM</b> .....	250
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.10 (2009). DEFINITIONS.....	250
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.15 (2009). FIRST DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT .....	252
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.20 (2009). SECOND DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT.....	253
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.25 (2009). THIRD DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT .....	253
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.30 (2009). FOURTH DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT .....	254
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.35 (2009). ASSAULT WITH INTENT TO COMMIT CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT .....	254
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.40 (2009). VICTIM'S TESTIMONY NEED NOT BE CORROBORATED....	254
9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.45 (2009). RESISTANCE NOT REQUIRED .....	255
<b>NORTHERN MARIANA ISLAND</b> .....	255
4.1 CMC § 404 (2008). RAPE DEFINED .....	255
4.1 CMC § 406 (2008). PENALTY FOR RAPE .....	255
4.1 CMC § 407 (2008). SODOMY DEFINED .....	256
4.1 CMC § 408 (2008). CRIMINAL SODOMY DEFINED AND PENALIZED .....	256
4.1 CMC § 410 (2008). CRIMINAL ORAL COPULATION DEFINED AND PENALIZED.....	256
<b>PUERTO RICO</b> .....	256
33 LAWS OF PUERTO RICO ANN. § 4061 (2004). RAPE .....	257
33 LAWS OF PUERTO RICO ANN. § 4065 (2004). SODOMY .....	258
<b>VIRGIN ISLANDS</b> .....	258
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1699 (2005). DEFINITIONS.....	259
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1700 (2005). AGGRAVATED RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	259
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1700A (2005). AGGRAVATED RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE.....	260
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1701 (2005). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	261
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1702 (2005). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	262
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1703 (2005). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE.....	262
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1704 (2005). PENETRATION NECESSARY TO CONSTITUTE RAPE.....	262
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1708 (2005). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE FIRST DEGREE .....	263
14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1709 (2005). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE SECOND DEGREE .....	263
<b>FEDERAL</b> .....	263
18 U.S.C.A. § 2241 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE.....	263

<b>18 U.S.C.A. § 2242 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE .....</b>	<b>264</b>
<b>18 U.S.C.A. § 2243 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE OF A MINOR OR WARD .....</b>	<b>265</b>
<b>18 U.S.C.A. § 2244 (West 2009). ABUSIVE SEXUAL CONTACT .....</b>	<b>266</b>
<b>18 U.S.C.A. § 2245 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE RESULTING IN DEATH .....</b>	<b>266</b>
<b>18 U.S.C.A. § 2246 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS FOR CHAPTER .....</b>	<b>267</b>
<b>18 U.S.C.A. § 2247 (West 2009). REPEAT OFFENDERS.....</b>	<b>268</b>
<b>18 U.S.C.A. § 2248 (West 2009). MANDATORY RESTITUTION .....</b>	<b>268</b>

# ALABAMA

## ALA. CODE § 13A-6-60 (2009). DEFINITIONS

The following definitions apply in this article:

- (1) Sexual intercourse. Such term has its ordinary meaning and occurs upon any penetration, however slight; emission is not required.
- (2) Deviate sexual intercourse. Any act of sexual gratification between persons not married to each other involving the sex organs of one person and the mouth or anus of another.
- (3) Sexual contact. Any touching of the sexual or other intimate parts of a person not married to the actor, done for the purpose of gratifying the sexual desire of either party.
- (4) Female. Any female person.
- (5) Mentally defective. Such term means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders him incapable of appraising the nature of his conduct.
- (6) Mentally incapacitated. Such term means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling his conduct owing to the influence of a narcotic or intoxicating substance administered to him without his consent, or to any other incapacitating act committed upon him without his consent.
- (7) Physically helpless. Such term means that a person is unconscious or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.
- (8) Forcible compulsion. Physical force that overcomes earnest resistance or a threat, express or implied, that places a person in fear of immediate death or serious physical injury to himself or another person.

## ALA. CODE § 13A-6-61 (2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE

(a) A person commits the crime of rape in the first degree if:

- (1) He or she engages in sexual intercourse with a member of the opposite sex by forcible compulsion; or
- (2) He or she engages in sexual intercourse with a member of the opposite sex who is incapable of consent by reason of being physically helpless or mentally incapacitated; or

(3) He or she, being 16 years or older, engages in sexual intercourse with a member of the opposite sex who is less than 12 years old.

(b) Rape in the first degree is a Class A felony.

### **ALA. CODE § 13A-6-62 (2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(a) A person commits the crime of rape in the second degree if:

(1) Being 16 years old or older, he or she engages in sexual intercourse with a member of the opposite sex less than 16 and more than 12 years old; provided, however, the actor is at least two years older than the member of the opposite sex.

(2) He or she engages in sexual intercourse with a member of the opposite sex who is incapable of consent by reason of being mentally defective.

(b) Rape in the second degree is a Class B felony.

### **ALA. CODE § 13A-6-63 (2009). SODOMY; FIRST DEGREE**

(a) A person commits the crime of sodomy in the first degree if:

(1) He engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person by forcible compulsion; or

(2) He engages in deviate sexual intercourse with a person who is incapable of consent by reason of being physically helpless or mentally incapacitated; or

(3) He, being 16 years old or older, engages in deviate sexual intercourse with a person who is less than 12 years old.

(b) Sodomy in the first degree is a Class A felony.

### **ALA. CODE § 13A-6-64 (2009). SODOMY; SECOND DEGREE**

(a) A person commits the crime of sodomy in the second degree if:

(1) He, being 16 years old or older, engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person less than 16 and more than 12 years old.

(2) He engages in deviate sexual intercourse with a person who is incapable of consent by reason of being mentally defective.

(b) Sodomy in the second degree is a Class B felony.



## **ALA. CODE § 13A-6-65 (2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT**

(a) A person commits the crime of sexual misconduct if:

(1) Being a male, he engages in sexual intercourse with a female without her consent, under circumstances other than those covered by Sections 13A-6-61 and 13A-6-62; or with her consent where consent was obtained by the use of any fraud or artifice; or

(2) Being a female, she engages in sexual intercourse with a male without his consent; or

(3) He or she engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person under circumstances other than those covered by Sections 13A-6-63 and 13A-6-64. Consent is no defense to a prosecution under this subdivision.

(b) Sexual misconduct is a Class A misdemeanor.

## **ALA. CODE 1975 § 13A-6-65.1 (2009). SEXUAL TORTURE**

(a) A person commits the crime of sexual torture:

(1) By penetrating the vagina or anus or mouth of another person with an inanimate object by forcible compulsion with the intent to sexually torture or to sexually abuse.

(2) By penetrating the vagina or anus or mouth of a person who is incapable of consent by reason of physical helplessness or mental incapacity with an inanimate object, with the intent to sexually torture or to sexually abuse.

(3) By penetrating the vagina or anus or mouth of a person who is less than 12 years old with an inanimate object, by a person who is 16 years old or older with the intent to sexually torture or to sexually abuse.

(b) The crime of sexual torture is a Class A felony.

## **ALA. CODE § 13A-6-66 (2009). SEXUAL ABUSE; FIRST DEGREE**

(a) A person commits the crime of sexual abuse in the first degree if:

(1) He subjects another person to sexual contact by forcible compulsion; or

(2) He subjects another person to sexual contact who is incapable of consent by reason of being physically helpless or mentally incapacitated.

(b) Sexual abuse in the first degree is a Class C felony.

### **ALA. CODE § 13A-6-67 (2009). SEXUAL ABUSE; SECOND DEGREE**

(a) A person commits the crime of sexual abuse in the second degree if:

(1) He subjects another person to sexual contact who is incapable of consent by reason of some factor other than being less than 16 years old; or

(2) He, being 19 years old or older, subjects another person to sexual contact who is less than 16 years old, but more than 12 years old.

(b) Sexual abuse in second degree is a Class A misdemeanor, except that if a person commits a second or subsequent offense of sexual abuse in the second degree within one year of another sexual offense, the offense is a Class C felony.

## **ALASKA**

### **ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.410 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(a) An offender commits the crime of sexual assault in the first degree if

(1) the offender engages in sexual penetration with another person without consent of that person;

(2) the offender attempts to engage in sexual penetration with another person without consent of that person and causes serious physical injury to that person;

(3) the offender engages in sexual penetration with another person

(A) who the offender knows is mentally incapable; and

(B) who is in the offender's care

(i) by authority of law; or

(ii) in a facility or program that is required by law to be licensed by the state; or

(4) the offender engages in sexual penetration with a person who the offender knows is unaware that a sexual act is being committed and

(A) the offender is a health care worker; and

(B) the offense takes place during the course of professional treatment of the victim.

(b) Sexual assault in the first degree is an unclassified felony and is punishable as provided in AS 12.55.

### **ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.420 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(a) An offender commits the crime of sexual assault in the second degree if

(1) the offender engages in sexual contact with another person without consent of that person;

(2) the offender engages in sexual contact with a person

(A) who the offender knows is mentally incapable; and

(B) who is in the offender's care

(i) by authority of law; or

(ii) in a facility or program that is required by law to be licensed by the state;

(3) the offender engages in sexual penetration with a person who the offender knows is

(A) mentally incapable;

(B) incapacitated; or

(C) unaware that a sexual act is being committed; or

(4) the offender engages in sexual contact with a person who the offender knows is unaware that a sexual act is being committed and

(A) the offender is a health care worker; and

(B) the offense takes place during the course of professional treatment of the victim.

(b) Sexual assault in the second degree is a class B felony.

### **ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.425 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(a) An offender commits the crime of sexual assault in the third degree if the offender

(1) engages in sexual contact with a person who the offender knows is

(A) mentally incapable;

(B) incapacitated; or

(C) unaware that a sexual act is being committed;

(2) while employed in a state correctional facility or other placement designated by the commissioner of corrections for the custody and care of prisoners, engages in sexual penetration with a person who the offender knows is committed to the custody of the Department of Corrections to serve a term of imprisonment or period of temporary commitment; or

(3) engages in sexual penetration with a person 18 or 19 years of age who the offender knows is committed to the custody of the Department of Health and Social Services under AS 47.10 or AS 47.12 and the offender is the legal guardian of the person.

(b) Sexual assault in the third degree is a class C felony.

#### **ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.427 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE**

(a) An offender commits the crime of sexual assault in the fourth degree if

(1) while employed in a state correctional facility or other placement designated by the commissioner of corrections for the custody and care of prisoners, the offender engages in sexual contact with a person who the offender knows is committed to the custody of the Department of Corrections to serve a term of imprisonment or period of temporary commitment; or

(2) the offender engages in sexual contact with a person 18 or 19 years of age who the offender knows is committed to the custody of the Department of Health and Social Services under AS 47.10 or AS 47.12 and the offender is the legal guardian of the person.

(b) Sexual assault in the fourth degree is a class A misdemeanor.

#### **ALASKA STAT. § 11.41.432 (2009). DEFENSES**

(a) It is a defense to a crime charged under AS 11.41.410(a)(3), 11.41.420(a)(2), 11.41.420(a)(3), or 11.41.425 that the offender is

(1) mentally incapable; or

(2) married to the person and neither party has filed with the court for a separation, divorce, or dissolution of the marriage.

(b) Except as provided in (a) of this section, in a prosecution under AS 11.41.410 or 11.41.420, it is not a defense that the victim was, at the time of the alleged offense, the legal spouse of the defendant.

## **ARIZONA**

### **ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1401 (2009). DEFINITIONS**

In this chapter, unless the context otherwise requires:

1. "Oral sexual contact" means oral contact with the penis, vulva or anus.
2. "Sexual contact" means any direct or indirect touching, fondling or manipulating of any part of the genitals, anus or female breast by any part of the body or by any object or causing a person to engage in such contact.
3. "Sexual intercourse" means penetration into the penis, vulva or anus by any part of the body or by any object or masturbatory contact with the penis or vulva.
4. "Spouse" means a person who is legally married and cohabiting.
5. "Without consent" includes any of the following:
  - (a) The victim is coerced by the immediate use or threatened use of force against a person or property.
  - (b) The victim is incapable of consent by reason of mental disorder, mental defect, drugs, alcohol, sleep or any other similar impairment of cognition and such condition is known or should have reasonably been known to the defendant. For purposes of this subdivision, "mental defect" means the victim is unable to comprehend the distinctively sexual nature of the conduct or is incapable of understanding or exercising the right to refuse to engage in the conduct with another.
  - (c) The victim is intentionally deceived as to the nature of the act.
  - (d) The victim is intentionally deceived to erroneously believe that the person is the victim's spouse.

### **ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1404 (2009). SEXUAL ABUSE; CLASSIFICATION**

A. A person commits sexual abuse by intentionally or knowingly engaging in sexual contact with any person who is fifteen or more years of age without consent of that person or with

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

any person who is under fifteen years of age if the sexual contact involves only the female breast.

B. Sexual abuse is a class 5 felony unless the victim is under fifteen years of age in which case sexual abuse is a class 3 felony punishable pursuant to § 13-705.

### **ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1405 (2009). SEXUAL CONDUCT WITH A MINOR; CLASSIFICATION; DEFINITION**

A. A person commits sexual conduct with a minor by intentionally or knowingly engaging in sexual intercourse or oral sexual contact with any person who is under eighteen years of age.

B. Sexual conduct with a minor who is under fifteen years of age is a class 2 felony and is punishable pursuant to § 13-705. Sexual conduct with a minor who is at least fifteen years of age is a class 6 felony. Sexual conduct with a minor who is at least fifteen years of age is a class 2 felony if the person is the minor's parent, stepparent, adoptive parent, legal guardian, foster parent or the minor's teacher or clergyman or priest and the convicted person is not eligible for suspension of sentence, probation, pardon or release from confinement on any basis except as specifically authorized by § 31-233, subsection A or B until the sentence imposed has been served or commuted.

### **ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1406 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; CLASSIFICATION; INCREASED PUNISHMENT**

A. A person commits sexual assault by intentionally or knowingly engaging in sexual intercourse or oral sexual contact with any person without consent of such person.

B. Sexual assault is a class 2 felony, and the person convicted shall be sentenced pursuant to this section and the person is not eligible for suspension of sentence, probation, pardon or release from confinement on any basis except as specifically authorized by § 31-233, subsection A or B until the sentence imposed by the court has been served or commuted. If the victim is under fifteen years of age, sexual assault is punishable pursuant to § 13-705. The presumptive term may be aggravated or mitigated within the range under this section pursuant to § 13-701, subsections C, D and E. If the sexual assault involved the intentional or knowing administration of flunitrazepam, gamma hydroxy butyrate or ketamine hydrochloride without the victim's knowledge, the presumptive, minimum and maximum sentence for the offense shall be increased by three years. The additional sentence imposed pursuant to this subsection is in addition to any enhanced sentence that may be applicable.

C. The sentence imposed on a person for a sexual assault shall be consecutive to any other sexual assault sentence imposed on the person at any time.

**D.** Notwithstanding § 13-703, § 13-704, § 13-705, § 13-706, subsection A and § 13-708, subsection D, if the sexual assault involved the intentional or knowing infliction of serious physical injury, the person may be sentenced to life imprisonment and is not eligible for suspension of sentence, probation, pardon or release from confinement on any basis except as specifically authorized by § 31-233, subsection A or B until at least twenty-five years have been served or the sentence is commuted. If the person was at least eighteen years of age and the victim was twelve years of age or younger, the person shall be sentenced pursuant to § 13-705.

## **ARIZ. REV. STAT. ANN. § 13-1407 (2009). DEFENSES**

**A.** It is a defense to a prosecution pursuant to §§ 13-1404 and 13-1405 involving a minor if the act was done in furtherance of lawful medical practice.

**B.** It is a defense to a prosecution pursuant to §§ 13-1404 and 13-1405 in which the victim's lack of consent is based on incapacity to consent because the victim was fifteen, sixteen or seventeen years of age if at the time the defendant engaged in the conduct constituting the offense the defendant did not know and could not reasonably have known the age of the victim.

**C.** It is a defense to a prosecution pursuant to § 13-1402, 13-1404, 13-1405 or 13-1406 if the act was done by a duly licensed physician or registered nurse or a person acting under the physician's or nurse's direction, or any other person who renders emergency care at the scene of an emergency occurrence, the act consisted of administering a recognized and lawful form of treatment that was reasonably adapted to promoting the physical or mental health of the patient and the treatment was administered in an emergency when the duly licensed physician or registered nurse or a person acting under the physician's or nurse's direction, or any other person rendering emergency care at the scene of an emergency occurrence, reasonably believed that no one competent to consent could be consulted and that a reasonable person, wishing to safeguard the welfare of the patient, would consent.

**D.** It is a defense to a prosecution pursuant to § 13-1404 or 13-1405 that the person was the spouse of the other person at the time of commission of the act. It is not a defense to a prosecution pursuant to § 13-1406 that the defendant was the spouse of the victim at the time of commission of the act.

**E.** It is a defense to a prosecution pursuant to § 13-1404 or 13-1410 that the defendant was not motivated by a sexual interest. It is a defense to a prosecution pursuant to § 13-1404 involving a victim under fifteen years of age that the defendant was not motivated by a sexual interest.

**F.** It is a defense to a prosecution pursuant to §§ 13-1405 and 13-3560 if the victim is fifteen, sixteen or seventeen years of age, the defendant is under nineteen years of age or attending high school and is no more than twenty-four months older than the victim and the conduct is consensual.

# ARKANSAS

## ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-101 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS

As used in this chapter:

(1) "Deviate sexual activity" means any act of sexual gratification involving:

(A) The penetration, however slight, of the anus or mouth of a person by the penis of another person; or

(B) The penetration, however slight, of the labia majora or anus of a person by any body member or foreign instrument manipulated by another person;

(2) "Forcible compulsion" means physical force or a threat, express or implied, of death or physical injury to or kidnapping of any person;

(3) "Guardian" means a parent, stepparent, legal guardian, legal custodian, foster parent, or any person who by virtue of a living arrangement is placed in an apparent position of power or authority over a minor;

(4)(A) "Mentally defective" means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect that renders the person:

(i) Incapable of understanding the nature and consequences of a sexual act; or

(ii) Unaware a sexual act is occurring.

(B) A determination that a person is mentally defective shall not be based solely on the person's intelligence quotient;

(5) "Mentally incapacitated" means that a person is temporarily incapable of appreciating or controlling the person's conduct as a result of the influence of a controlled or intoxicating substance:

(A) Administered to the person without the person's consent; or

(B) That renders the person unaware a sexual act is occurring;

(6) "Physically helpless" means that a person is:

(A) Unconscious;

(B) Physically unable to communicate a lack of consent; or

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS



(C) Rendered unaware a sexual act is occurring;

(7) "Public place" means a publicly or privately owned place to which the public or a substantial number of people have access;

(8) "Public view" means observable or likely to be observed by a person in a public place;

(9) "Sexual contact" means any act of sexual gratification involving the touching, directly or through clothing, of the sex organs, buttocks, or anus of a person or the breast of a female; and

(10) "Sexual intercourse" means penetration, however slight, of the labia majora by a penis.

(11) "Minor" means a person who is less than eighteen (18) years of age.

## **ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-102 (West 2009). CRIMINALITY OF CONDUCT**

(a) The definition of an offense that excludes conduct with a spouse shall not be construed to preclude accomplice liability of a spouse.

(b) When the criminality of conduct depends on a child's being below fourteen (14) years of age and the actor is twenty (20) years of age or older, it is no defense that the actor:

(1) Did not know the age of the child; or

(2) Reasonably believed the child to be fourteen (14) years of age or older.

(c)(1) When criminality of conduct depends on a child's being below fourteen (14) years of age and the actor is under twenty (20) years of age, it is an affirmative defense that the actor reasonably believed the child to be of the critical age or above.

(2) However, the actor may be guilty of the lesser offense defined by the age that the actor reasonably believed the child to be.

(d)(1) When criminality of conduct depends on a child's being below a critical age older than fourteen (14) years, it is an affirmative defense that the actor reasonably believed the child to be of the critical age or above.

(2) However, the actor may be guilty of the lesser offense defined by the age that the actor reasonably believed the child to be.

(e) When criminality of conduct depends on a victim's being incapable of consent because he or she is mentally defective or mentally incapacitated, it is an affirmative defense that the actor reasonably believed that the victim was capable of consent.

## **ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-103 (West 2009). RAPE**

(a) A person commits rape if he or she engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity with another person:

(1) By forcible compulsion;

(2) Who is incapable of consent because he or she is:

(A) Physically helpless;

(B) Mentally defective; or

(C) Mentally incapacitated;

(3)(A) Who is less than fourteen (14) years of age.

(B) It is an affirmative defense to a prosecution under subdivision (a)(3)(A) of this section that the actor was not more than three (3) years older than the victim; or

(4)(A) Who is a minor and the actor is the victim's:

(i) Guardian;

(ii) Uncle, aunt, grandparent, step-grandparent, or grandparent by adoption;

(iii) Brother or sister of the whole or half blood or by adoption; or

(iv) Nephew, niece, or first cousin.

(B) It is an affirmative defense to a prosecution under subdivision (a)(4)(A) of this section that the actor was not more than three (3) years older than the victim.

(b) It is no defense to a prosecution under subdivisions (a)(3) or (4) of this section that the victim consented to the conduct.

(c)(1) Rape is a Class Y felony.

(2) Any person who pleads guilty or nolo contendere to or is found guilty of rape involving a victim who is less than fourteen (14) years of age shall be sentenced to a minimum term of imprisonment of twenty-five (25) years.

(d)(1) A court may issue a permanent no contact order when:

(A) A defendant pleads guilty or nolo contendere; or

(B) All of the defendant's appeals have been exhausted and the defendant remains convicted.

(2) If a judicial officer has reason to believe that mental disease or defect of the defendant will or has become an issue in the case, the judicial officer shall enter such orders as are consistent with § 5-2-305.

### **ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-124 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(a) A person commits sexual assault in the first degree if the person engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity with another person who is less than eighteen (18) years of age and is not the actor's spouse and the actor is:

(1) Employed with the Department of Correction, the Department of Community Correction, the Department of Health and Human Services, or any city or county jail or a juvenile detention facility, and the victim is in the custody of the Department of Correction, the Department of Community Correction, the Department of Health and Human Services, any city or county jail or juvenile detention facility, or their contractors or agents;

(2) A professional under § 12-12-507(b) and is in a position of trust or authority over the victim and uses the position of trust or authority to engage in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity; or

(3) An employee in the victim's school or school district, a temporary caretaker, or a person in a position of trust or authority over the victim.

(b) It is no defense to a prosecution under this section that the victim consented to the conduct.

(c) It is an affirmative defense to a prosecution under subdivision (a)(3) of this section that the actor was not more than three (3) years older than the victim.

(d) Sexual assault in the first degree is a Class A felony.

### **ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-125 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(a) A person commits sexual assault in the second degree if the person:

(1) Engages in sexual contact with another person by forcible compulsion;

(2) Engages in sexual contact with another person who is incapable of consent because he or she is:

(A) Physically helpless;

(B) Mentally defective; or

(C) Mentally incapacitated;

(3) Being eighteen (18) years of age or older, engages in sexual contact with another person who is:

(A) Less than fourteen (14) years of age; and

(B) Not the person's spouse;

(4) (A) Engages in sexual contact with another person who is less than eighteen (18) years of age and the actor is:

(i) Employed with the Department of Correction, Department of Community Correction, any city or county jail, or any juvenile detention facility, and the minor is in custody at a facility operated by the agency or contractor employing the actor;

(ii) A professional under § 12-12-507(b) and is in a position of trust or authority over the minor; or

(iii) The minor's guardian, an employee in the minor's school or school district, a temporary caretaker, or a person in a position of trust or authority over the minor.

(B) For purposes of subdivision (a)(4)(A) of this section, consent of the minor is not a defense to a prosecution;

(5) (A) Being less than eighteen (18) years of age, engages in sexual contact with another person who is:

(i) Less than fourteen (14) years of age; and

(ii) Not the person's spouse.

(B) It is an affirmative defense to a prosecution under this subdivision (a)(5) that the actor was not more than:

(i) Three (3) years older than the victim if the victim is less than twelve (12) years of age; or

(ii) Four (4) years older than the victim if the victim is twelve (12) years of age or older; or

(6) Is a teacher in a public school in a grade kindergarten through twelve (K-12) and engages in sexual contact with another person who is:

(A) A student enrolled in the public school; and

(B) Less than twenty-one (21) years of age.

(b) (1) Sexual assault in the second degree is a Class B felony.

(2) Sexual assault in the second degree is a Class D felony if committed by a person less than eighteen (18) years of age with another person who is:

(A) Less than fourteen (14) years of age; and

(B) Not the person's spouse.

### **ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-126 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(a) A person commits sexual assault in the third degree if the person:

(1) Engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity with another person who is not the actor's spouse, and the actor is:

(A) Employed with the Department of Correction, Department of Community Correction, Department of Health and Human Services, or any city or county jail, and the victim is in the custody of the Department of Correction, Department of Community Correction, Department of Health and Human Services, or any city or county jail; or

(B) A professional under § 12-12-507(b) or a member of the clergy and is in a position of trust or authority over the victim and uses the position of trust or authority to engage in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity; or

(C) A professional under § 12-12-507(b) or a member of the clergy and is in a position of trust or authority over the victim and uses the position of trust or authority to engage in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity; or

(2) (A) Being under eighteen (18) years of age, engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity with another person who is:

(i) Less than fourteen (14) years of age; and

(ii) Not the person's spouse

(B) It is an affirmative defense under this subdivision (a)(2) that the actor was not more than three (3) years older than the victim.

(b) It is no defense to a prosecution under this section that the victim consented to the conduct.

(c) Sexual assault in the third degree is a Class C felony.

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

**ARK. CODE ANN. § 5-14-127 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE**

(a) A person commits sexual assault in the fourth degree if the person:

(1) Being twenty (20) years of age or older:

(A) Engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual activity with another person who is:

(i) Less than sixteen (16) years of age; and

(ii) Not the person's spouse; or

(B) Engages in sexual contact with another person who is:

(i) Less than sixteen (16) years of age; and

(ii) Not the person's spouse; or

(2) Engages in sexual contact with another person who is not the actor's spouse, and the actor is employed with the Department of Correction, Department of Community Correction, Department of Human Services, or any city or county jail, and the victim is in the custody of the Department of Correction, Department of Community Correction, Department of Human Services, or a city or county jail.

(b)(1) Sexual assault in the fourth degree under subdivisions (a)(1)(A) and (a)(2) of this section is a Class D felony.

(2) Sexual assault in the fourth degree under subdivision (a)(1)(B) of this section is a Class A misdemeanor if the person engages only in sexual contact with another person as described in subdivision (a)(1)(B) of this section.

**CALIFORNIA**

**CAL. PENAL CODE § 261 (West 2009). RAPE DEFINED**

(a) Rape is an act of sexual intercourse accomplished with a person not the spouse of the perpetrator, under any of the following circumstances:

(1) Where a person is incapable, because of a mental disorder or developmental or physical disability, of giving legal consent, and this is known or reasonably should be known to the person committing the act. Notwithstanding the existence of a conservatorship pursuant to

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

the provisions of the Lanterman-Petris-Short Act (Part 1 (commencing with Section 5000) of Division 5 of the Welfare and Institutions Code), the prosecuting attorney shall prove, as an element of the crime, that a mental disorder or developmental or physical disability rendered the alleged victim incapable of giving consent.

(2) Where it is accomplished against a person's will by means of force, violence, duress, menace, or fear of immediate and unlawful bodily injury on the person or another.

(3) Where a person is prevented from resisting by any intoxicating or anesthetic substance, or any controlled substance, and this condition was known, or reasonably should have been known by the accused.

(4) Where a person is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act, and this is known to the accused. As used in this paragraph, "unconscious of the nature of the act" means incapable of resisting because the victim meets one of the following conditions:

(A) Was unconscious or asleep.

(B) Was not aware, knowing, perceiving, or cognizant that the act occurred.

(C) Was not aware, knowing, perceiving, or cognizant of the essential characteristics of the act due to the perpetrator's fraud in fact.

(D) Was not aware, knowing, perceiving, or cognizant of the essential characteristics of the act due to the perpetrator's fraudulent representation that the sexual penetration served a professional purpose when it served no professional purpose.

(5) Where a person submits under the belief that the person committing the act is the victim's spouse, and this belief is induced by any artifice, pretense, or concealment practiced by the accused, with intent to induce the belief.

(6) Where the act is accomplished against the victim's will by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim or any other person, and there is a reasonable possibility that the perpetrator will execute the threat. As used in this paragraph, "threatening to retaliate" means a threat to kidnap or falsely imprison, or to inflict extreme pain, serious bodily injury, or death.

(7) Where the act is accomplished against the victim's will by threatening to use the authority of a public official to incarcerate, arrest, or deport the victim or another, and the victim has a reasonable belief that the perpetrator is a public official. As used in this paragraph, "public official" means a person employed by a governmental agency who has the authority, as part of that position, to incarcerate, arrest, or deport another. The perpetrator does not actually have to be a public official.

(b) As used in this section, "duress" means a direct or implied threat of force, violence, danger, or retribution sufficient to coerce a reasonable person of ordinary susceptibilities to perform an act which otherwise would not have been performed, or acquiesce in an act to which one otherwise would not have submitted. The total circumstances, including the age

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

of the victim, and his or her relationship to the defendant, are factors to consider in appraising the existence of duress.

(c) As used in this section, “menace” means any threat, declaration, or act which shows an intention to inflict an injury upon another.

## **CAL. PENAL CODE § 262 (West 2009). RAPE OF A SPOUSE; ELEMENTS; CONDITIONS OF PROBATION; FINES, PAYMENTS, OR RESTITUTION**

(a) Rape of a person who is the spouse of the perpetrator is an act of sexual intercourse accomplished under any of the following circumstances:

(1) Where it is accomplished against a person's will by means of force, violence, duress, menace, or fear of immediate and unlawful bodily injury on the person or another.

(2) Where a person is prevented from resisting by any intoxicating or anesthetic substance, or any controlled substance, and this condition was known, or reasonably should have been known, by the accused.

(3) Where a person is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act, and this is known to the accused. As used in this paragraph, “unconscious of the nature of the act” means incapable of resisting because the victim meets one of the following conditions:

(A) Was unconscious or asleep.

(B) Was not aware, knowing, perceiving, or cognizant that the act occurred.

(C) Was not aware, knowing, perceiving, or cognizant of the essential characteristics of the act due to the perpetrator's fraud in fact.

(4) Where the act is accomplished against the victim's will by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim or any other person, and there is a reasonable possibility that the perpetrator will execute the threat. As used in this paragraph, “threatening to retaliate” means a threat to kidnap or falsely imprison, or to inflict extreme pain, serious bodily injury, or death.

(5) Where the act is accomplished against the victim's will by threatening to use the authority of a public official to incarcerate, arrest, or deport the victim or another, and the victim has a reasonable belief that the perpetrator is a public official. As used in this paragraph, “public official” means a person employed by a governmental agency who has the authority, as part of that position, to incarcerate, arrest, or deport another. The perpetrator does not actually have to be a public official.

(b) As used in this section, “duress” means a direct or implied threat of force, violence, danger, or retribution sufficient to coerce a reasonable person of ordinary susceptibilities to perform an act which otherwise would not have been performed, or acquiesce in an act to

---

### **RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**



which one otherwise would not have submitted. The total circumstances, including the age of the victim, and his or her relationship to the defendant, are factors to consider in apprising the existence of duress.

(c) As used in this section, “menace” means any threat, declaration, or act that shows an intention to inflict an injury upon another.

(d) If probation is granted upon conviction of a violation of this section, the conditions of probation may include, in lieu of a fine, one or both of the following requirements:

(1) That the defendant make payments to a battered women's shelter, up to a maximum of one thousand dollars (\$1,000).

(2) That the defendant reimburse the victim for reasonable costs of counseling and other reasonable expenses that the court finds are the direct result of the defendant's offense.

For any order to pay a fine, make payments to a battered women's shelter, or pay restitution as a condition of probation under this subdivision, the court shall make a determination of the defendant's ability to pay. In no event shall any order to make payments to a battered women's shelter be made if it would impair the ability of the defendant to pay direct restitution to the victim or court-ordered child support. Where the injury to a married person is caused in whole or in part by the criminal acts of his or her spouse in violation of this section, the community property may not be used to discharge the liability of the offending spouse for restitution to the injured spouse, required by Section 1203.04, as operative on or before August 2, 1995, or Section 1202.4, or to a shelter for costs with regard to the injured spouse and dependents, required by this section, until all separate property of the offending spouse is exhausted.

## **CAL. PENAL CODE § 263 (West 2009). RAPE; ESSENTIALS; SUFFICIENCY OF PENETRATION**

The essential guilt of rape consists in the outrage to the person and feelings of the victim of the rape. Any sexual penetration, however slight, is sufficient to complete the crime.

## **CAL. PENAL CODE § 264.1 (West 2009). RAPE OR PENETRATION OF GENITAL OR ANAL OPENINGS BY FOREIGN OBJECT, ETC.; ACTING IN CONCERT BY FORCE OR VIOLENCE; PUNISHMENT**

The provisions of Section 264 notwithstanding, in any case in which the defendant, voluntarily acting in concert with another person, by force or violence and against the will of the victim, committed an act described in Section 261, 262, or 289, either personally or by aiding and abetting the other person, that fact shall be charged in the indictment or information and if found to be true by the jury, upon a jury trial, or if found to be true by the

court, upon a court trial, or if admitted by the defendant, the defendant shall suffer confinement in the state prison for five, seven, or nine years.

### **CAL. PENAL CODE § 261.6 (West 2009). CONSENT; CURRENT OR PREVIOUS DATING OR MARITAL RELATIONSHIP; ADMISSIBILITY OF EVIDENCE OR BURDEN OF PROOF**

In prosecutions under Section 261, 262, 286, 288a, or 289, in which consent is at issue, “consent” shall be defined to mean positive cooperation in act or attitude pursuant to an exercise of free will. The person must act freely and voluntarily and have knowledge of the nature of the act or transaction involved.

A current or previous dating or marital relationship shall not be sufficient to constitute consent where consent is at issue in a prosecution under Section 261, 262, 286, 288a, or 289.

Nothing in this section shall affect the admissibility of evidence or the burden of proof on the issue of consent.

### **CAL. PENAL CODE § 261.7 (West 2009). EVIDENCE THAT VICTIM REQUESTED THAT DEFENDANT USE CONDOM OR OTHER BIRTH CONTROL DEVICE; CONSENT**

In prosecutions under Section 261, 262, 286, 288a, or 289, in which consent is at issue, evidence that the victim suggested, requested, or otherwise communicated to the defendant that the defendant use a condom or other birth control device, without additional evidence of consent, is not sufficient to constitute consent.

### **CAL. PENAL CODE § 243.4 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

(a) Any person who touches an intimate part of another person while that person is unlawfully restrained by the accused or an accomplice, and if the touching is against the will of the person touched and is for the purpose of sexual arousal, sexual gratification, or sexual abuse, is guilty of sexual battery. A violation of this subdivision is punishable by imprisonment in a county jail for not more than one year, and by a fine not exceeding two thousand dollars (\$2,000); or by imprisonment in the state prison for two, three, or four years, and by a fine not exceeding ten thousand dollars (\$10,000).

(b) Any person who touches an intimate part of another person who is institutionalized for medical treatment and who is seriously disabled or medically incapacitated, if the touching is against the will of the person touched, and if the touching is for the purpose of sexual arousal, sexual gratification, or sexual abuse, is guilty of sexual battery. A violation of this subdivision is punishable by imprisonment in a county jail for not more than one year, and

by a fine not exceeding two thousand dollars (\$2,000); or by imprisonment in the state prison for two, three, or four years, and by a fine not exceeding ten thousand dollars (\$10,000).

(c) Any person who touches an intimate part of another person for the purpose of sexual arousal, sexual gratification, or sexual abuse, and the victim is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act because the perpetrator fraudulently represented that the touching served a professional purpose, is guilty of sexual battery. A violation of this subdivision is punishable by imprisonment in a county jail for not more than one year, and by a fine not exceeding two thousand dollars (\$2,000); or by imprisonment in the state prison for two, three, or four years, and by a fine not exceeding ten thousand dollars (\$10,000).

(d) Any person who, for the purpose of sexual arousal, sexual gratification, or sexual abuse, causes another, against that person's will while that person is unlawfully restrained either by the accused or an accomplice, or is institutionalized for medical treatment and is seriously disabled or medically incapacitated, to masturbate or touch an intimate part of either of those persons or a third person, is guilty of sexual battery. A violation of this subdivision is punishable by imprisonment in a county jail for not more than one year, and by a fine not exceeding two thousand dollars (\$2,000); or by imprisonment in the state prison for two, three, or four years, and by a fine not exceeding ten thousand dollars (\$10,000).

(e)(1) Any person who touches an intimate part of another person, if the touching is against the will of the person touched, and is for the specific purpose of sexual arousal, sexual gratification, or sexual abuse, is guilty of misdemeanor sexual battery, punishable by a fine not exceeding two thousand dollars (\$2,000), or by imprisonment in a county jail not exceeding six months, or by both that fine and imprisonment. However, if the defendant was an employer and the victim was an employee of the defendant, the misdemeanor sexual battery shall be punishable by a fine not exceeding three thousand dollars (\$3,000), by imprisonment in a county jail not exceeding six months, or by both that fine and imprisonment. Notwithstanding any other provision of law, any amount of a fine above two thousand dollars (\$2,000) which is collected from a defendant for a violation of this subdivision shall be transmitted to the State Treasury and, upon appropriation by the Legislature, distributed to the Department of Fair Employment and Housing for the purpose of enforcement of the California Fair Employment and Housing Act (Part 2.8 (commencing with Section 12900) of Division 3 of Title 2 of the Government Code), including, but not limited to, laws that proscribe sexual harassment in places of employment. However, in no event shall an amount over two thousand dollars (\$2,000) be transmitted to the State Treasury until all fines, including any restitution fines that may have been imposed upon the defendant, have been paid in full.

(2) As used in this subdivision, "touches" means physical contact with another person, whether accomplished directly, through the clothing of the person committing the offense, or through the clothing of the victim.

(f) As used in subdivisions (a), (b), (c), and (d), "touches" means physical contact with the skin of another person whether accomplished directly or through the clothing of the person committing the offense.

---

**RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**

(g) As used in this section, the following terms have the following meanings:

(1) "Intimate part" means the sexual organ, anus, groin, or buttocks of any person, and the breast of a female.

(2) "Sexual battery" does not include the crimes defined in Section 261 or 289.

(3) "Seriously disabled" means a person with severe physical or sensory disabilities.

(4) "Medically incapacitated" means a person who is incapacitated as a result of prescribed sedatives, anesthesia, or other medication.

(5) "Institutionalized" means a person who is located voluntarily or involuntarily in a hospital, medical treatment facility, nursing home, acute care facility, or mental hospital.

(6) "Minor" means a person under 18 years of age.

(h) This section shall not be construed to limit or prevent prosecution under any other law which also proscribes a course of conduct that also is proscribed by this section.

(i) In the case of a felony conviction for a violation of this section, the fact that the defendant was an employer and the victim was an employee of the defendant shall be a factor in aggravation in sentencing.

(j) A person who commits a violation of subdivision (a), (b), (c), or (d) against a minor when the person has a prior felony conviction for a violation of this section shall be guilty of a felony, punishable by imprisonment in the state prison for two, three, or four years and a fine not exceeding ten thousand dollars (\$10,000).

**CAL. PENAL CODE § 266c (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL INTERCOURSE, SEXUAL PENETRATION, ORAL COPULATION, OR SODOMY; CONSENT PROCURED BY FALSE OR FRAUDULENT REPRESENTATION WITH INTENT TO CREATE FEAR; PUNISHMENT**

Every person who induces any other person to engage in sexual intercourse, sexual penetration, oral copulation, or sodomy when his or her consent is procured by false or fraudulent representation or pretense that is made with the intent to create fear, and which does induce fear, and that would cause a reasonable person in like circumstances to act contrary to the person's free will, and does cause the victim to so act, is punishable by imprisonment in a county jail for not more than one year or in the state prison for two, three, or four years.

As used in this section, "fear" means the fear of physical injury or death to the person or to any relative of the person or member of the person's family.

# COLORADO

## COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-401 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS

As used in this part 4, unless the context otherwise requires:

(1) “Actor” means the person accused of a sexual offense pursuant to this part 4.

(1.5) “Consent” means cooperation in act or attitude pursuant to an exercise of free will and with knowledge of the nature of the act. A current or previous relationship shall not be sufficient to constitute consent under the provisions of this part 4. Submission under the influence of fear shall not constitute consent. Nothing in this definition shall be construed to affect the admissibility of evidence or the burden of proof in regard to the issue of consent under this part 4.

(1.7) “Diagnostic test” means a human immunodeficiency virus (HIV) screening test followed by a supplemental HIV test for confirmation in those instances when the HIV screening test is repeatedly reactive.

(2) “Intimate parts” means the external genitalia or the perineum or the anus or the buttocks or the pubes or the breast of any person.

(2.5) “Pattern of sexual abuse” means the commission of two or more incidents of sexual contact involving a child when such offenses are committed by an actor upon the same victim.

(3) “Physically helpless” means unconscious, asleep, or otherwise unable to indicate willingness to act.

(3.5) One in a “position of trust” includes, but is not limited to, any person who is a parent or acting in the place of a parent and charged with any of a parent's rights, duties, or responsibilities concerning a child, including a guardian or someone otherwise responsible for the general supervision of a child's welfare, or a person who is charged with any duty or responsibility for the health, education, welfare, or supervision of a child, including foster care, child care, family care, or institutional care, either independently or through another, no matter how brief, at the time of an unlawful act.

(4) “Sexual contact” means the knowing touching of the victim's intimate parts by the actor, or of the actor's intimate parts by the victim, or the knowing touching of the clothing covering the immediate area of the victim's or actor's intimate parts if that sexual contact is for the purposes of sexual arousal, gratification, or abuse.

(5) "Sexual intrusion" means any intrusion, however slight, by any object or any part of a person's body, except the mouth, tongue, or penis, into the genital or anal opening of another person's body if that sexual intrusion can reasonably be construed as being for the purposes of sexual arousal, gratification, or abuse.

(6) "Sexual penetration" means sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, analingus, or anal intercourse. Emission need not be proved as an element of any sexual penetration. Any penetration, however slight, is sufficient to complete the crime.

(7) "Victim" means the person alleging to have been subjected to a criminal sexual assault.

## **COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-402 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(1) Any actor who knowingly inflicts sexual intrusion or sexual penetration on a victim commits sexual assault if:

(a) The actor causes submission of the victim by means of sufficient consequence reasonably calculated to cause submission against the victim's will; or

(b) The actor knows that the victim is incapable of appraising the nature of the victim's conduct; or

(c) The actor knows that the victim submits erroneously, believing the actor to be the victim's spouse; or

(d) At the time of the commission of the act, the victim is less than fifteen years of age and the actor is at least four years older than the victim and is not the spouse of the victim; or

(e) At the time of the commission of the act, the victim is at least fifteen years of age but less than seventeen years of age and the actor is at least ten years older than the victim and is not the spouse of the victim; or

(f) The victim is in custody of law or detained in a hospital or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim and uses this position of authority to coerce the victim to submit, unless the act is incident to a lawful search; or

(g) The actor, while purporting to offer a medical service, engages in treatment or examination of a victim for other than a bona fide medical purpose or in a manner substantially inconsistent with reasonable medical practices; or

(h) The victim is physically helpless and the actor knows the victim is physically helpless and the victim has not consented.

(2) Sexual assault is a class 4 felony, except as provided in subsections (3), (3.5), (4), and (5) of this section.

(3) If committed under the circumstances of paragraph (e) of subsection (1) of this section, sexual assault is a class 1 misdemeanor and is an extraordinary risk crime that is subject to the modified sentencing range specified in section 18-1.3-501(3).

(3.5) Sexual assault is a class 3 felony if committed under the circumstances described in paragraph (h) of subsection (1) of this section.

(4) Sexual assault is a class 3 felony if it is attended by any one or more of the following circumstances:

(a) The actor causes submission of the victim through the actual application of physical force or physical violence; or

(b) The actor causes submission of the victim by threat of imminent death, serious bodily injury, extreme pain, or kidnapping, to be inflicted on anyone, and the victim believes that the actor has the present ability to execute these threats; or

(c) The actor causes submission of the victim by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim, or any other person, and the victim reasonably believes that the actor will execute this threat. As used in this paragraph (c), "to retaliate" includes threats of kidnapping, death, serious bodily injury, or extreme pain; or

(d) The actor has substantially impaired the victim's power to appraise or control the victim's conduct by employing, without the victim's consent, any drug, intoxicant, or other means for the purpose of causing submission.

(e) Deleted by Laws 2002, Ch. 322, § 2, eff. July 1, 2002.

(5)(a) Sexual assault is a class 2 felony if any one or more of the following circumstances exist:

(I) In the commission of the sexual assault, the actor is physically aided or abetted by one or more other persons; or

(II) The victim suffers serious bodily injury; or

(III) The actor is armed with a deadly weapon or an article used or fashioned in a manner to cause a person to reasonably believe that the article is a deadly weapon or represents verbally or otherwise that the actor is armed with a deadly weapon and uses the deadly weapon, article, or representation to cause submission of the victim.

(b)(I) If a defendant is convicted of sexual assault pursuant to this subsection (5), the court shall sentence the defendant in accordance with section 18-1.3-401(8)(e). A person convicted solely of sexual assault pursuant to this subsection (5) shall not be sentenced under the crime of violence provisions of section 18-1.3-406(2). Any sentence for a conviction under this subsection (5) shall be consecutive to any sentence for a conviction for a crime of violence under section 18-1.3-406.

(II) The provisions of this paragraph (b) shall apply to offenses committed prior to November 1, 1998.

(6) Any person convicted of felony sexual assault committed on or after November 1, 1998, under any of the circumstances described in this section shall be sentenced in accordance with the provisions of part 10 of article 1.3 of this title.

## **COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-404 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT**

(1) Any actor who knowingly subjects a victim to any sexual contact commits unlawful sexual contact if:

(a) The actor knows that the victim does not consent; or

(b) The actor knows that the victim is incapable of appraising the nature of the victim's conduct; or

(c) The victim is physically helpless and the actor knows that the victim is physically helpless and the victim has not consented; or

(d) The actor has substantially impaired the victim's power to appraise or control the victim's conduct by employing, without the victim's consent, any drug, intoxicant, or other means for the purpose of causing submission; or

(e) Repealed by Laws 1990, H.B.90-1133, § 25, eff. July 1, 1990.

(f) The victim is in custody of law or detained in a hospital or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim and uses this position of authority, unless incident to a lawful search, to coerce the victim to submit; or

(g) The actor engages in treatment or examination of a victim for other than bona fide medical purposes or in a manner substantially inconsistent with reasonable medical practices.

(1.5) Any person who knowingly, with or without sexual contact, induces or coerces a child by any of the means set forth in section 18-3-402 to expose intimate parts or to engage in any sexual contact, intrusion, or penetration with another person, for the purpose of the actor's own sexual gratification, commits unlawful sexual contact. For the purposes of this subsection (1.5), the term "child" means any person under the age of eighteen years.

(1.7) Any person who knowingly observes or takes a photograph of another person's intimate parts without that person's consent, in a situation where the person observed has a reasonable expectation of privacy, for the purpose of the observer's own sexual gratification, commits unlawful sexual contact. For purposes of this subsection (1.7),

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS



“photograph” includes any photograph, motion picture, videotape, print, negative, slide, or other mechanically, electronically, or chemically reproduced visual material.

(2)(a) Unlawful sexual contact is a class 1 misdemeanor and is an extraordinary risk crime that is subject to the modified sentencing range specified in section 18-1.3-501(3).

(b) Notwithstanding the provisions of paragraph (a) of this subsection (2), unlawful sexual contact is a class 4 felony if the actor compels the victim to submit by use of such force, intimidation, or threat as specified in section 18-3-402(4)(a), (4)(b), or (4)(c) or if the actor engages in the conduct described in paragraph (g) of subsection (1) of this section or subsection (1.5) of this section.

(3) If a defendant is convicted of the class 4 felony of unlawful sexual contact pursuant to paragraph (b) of subsection (2) of this section, the court shall sentence the defendant in accordance with the provisions of section 18-1.3-406; except that this subsection (3) shall not apply if the actor engages in the conduct described in paragraph (g) of subsection (1) of this section.

## **COLO. REV. STAT. ANN. § 18-3-409 (West 2009). MARITAL DEFENSE**

Any marital relationship, whether established statutorily, putatively, or by common law, between an actor and a victim shall not be a defense to any offense under this part 4 unless such defense is specifically set forth in the applicable statutory section by having the elements of the offense specifically exclude a spouse.

## **CONNECTICUT**

### **CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-65 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

As used in this part, except section 53a-70b, the following terms have the following meanings:

(1) “Actor” means a person accused of sexual assault.

(2) “Sexual intercourse” means vaginal intercourse, anal intercourse, fellatio or cunnilingus between persons regardless of sex. Its meaning is limited to persons not married to each other. Penetration, however slight, is sufficient to complete vaginal intercourse, anal intercourse or fellatio and does not require emission of semen. Penetration may be committed by an object manipulated by the actor into the genital or anal opening of the victim's body.

(3) "Sexual contact" means any contact with the intimate parts of a person not married to the actor for the purpose of sexual gratification of the actor or for the purpose of degrading or humiliating such person or any contact of the intimate parts of the actor with a person not married to the actor for the purpose of sexual gratification of the actor or for the purpose of degrading or humiliating such person.

(4) "Mentally defective" means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders such person incapable of appraising the nature of such person's conduct.

(5) "Mentally incapacitated" means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling such person's conduct owing to the influence of a drug or intoxicating substance administered to such person without such person's consent, or owing to any other act committed upon such person without such person's consent.

(6) "Physically helpless" means that a person is unconscious or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

(7) "Use of force" means: (A) Use of a dangerous instrument; or (B) use of actual physical force or violence or superior physical strength against the victim.

(8) "Intimate parts" means the genital area or any substance emitted therefrom, groin, anus or any substance emitted therefrom, inner thighs, buttocks or breasts.

(9) "Psychotherapist" means a physician, psychologist, nurse, substance abuse counselor, social worker, clergyman, marital and family therapist, mental health service provider, hypnotist or other person, whether or not licensed or certified by the state, who performs or purports to perform psychotherapy.

(10) "Psychotherapy" means the professional treatment, assessment or counseling of a mental or emotional illness, symptom or condition.

(11) "Emotionally dependent" means that the nature of the patient's or former patient's emotional condition and the nature of the treatment provided by the psychotherapist are such that the psychotherapist knows or has reason to know that the patient or former patient is unable to withhold consent to sexual contact by or sexual intercourse with the psychotherapist.

(12) "Therapeutic deception" means a representation by a psychotherapist that sexual contact by or sexual intercourse with the psychotherapist is consistent with or part of the patient's treatment.

(13) "School employee" means: (A) A teacher, substitute teacher, school administrator, school superintendent, guidance counselor, psychologist, social worker, nurse, physician, school paraprofessional or coach employed by a local or regional board of education or a private elementary, middle or high school or working in a public or private elementary, middle or high school; or (B) any other person who, in the performance of his or her duties, has regular contact with students and who provides services to or on behalf of students enrolled in (i) a public elementary, middle or high school, pursuant to a contract with the

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

local or regional board of education, or (ii) a private elementary, middle or high school, pursuant to a contract with the supervisory agent of such private school.

### **CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-67 (West 2009). AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSES**

(a) In any prosecution for an offense under this part based on the victim's being mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless, it shall be an affirmative defense that the actor, at the time such actor engaged in the conduct constituting the offense, did not know of such condition of the victim.

(b) In any prosecution for an offense under this part, except an offense under section 53a-70, 53a-70a, 53a-70b, 53a-71, 53a-72a or 53a-72b, it shall be an affirmative defense that the defendant and the alleged victim were, at the time of the alleged offense, living together by mutual consent in a relationship of cohabitation, regardless of the legal status of their relationship.

### **CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-70 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE: CLASS B OR A FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the first degree when such person (1) compels another person to engage in sexual intercourse by the use of force against such other person or a third person, or by the threat of use of force against such other person or against a third person which reasonably causes such person to fear physical injury to such person or a third person, or (2) engages in sexual intercourse with another person and such other person is under thirteen years of age and the actor is more than two years older than such person, or (3) commits sexual assault in the second degree as provided in section 53a-71 and in the commission of such offense is aided by two or more other persons actually present, or (4) engages in sexual intercourse with another person and such other person is mentally incapacitated to the extent that such other person is unable to consent to such sexual intercourse.

(b) (1) Except as provided in subdivision (2) of this subsection, sexual assault in the first degree is a class B felony for which two years of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court or, if the victim of the offense is under ten years of age, for which ten years of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court.

(2) Sexual assault in the first degree is a class A felony if the offense is a violation of subdivision (1) of subsection (a) of this section and the victim of the offense is under sixteen years of age or the offense is a violation of subdivision (2) of subsection (a) of this section. Any person found guilty under said subdivision (1) or (2) shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment of which ten years of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court if the victim is under ten years of age or of which five years of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court if the victim is under sixteen years of age.

(3) Any person found guilty under this section shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment and a period of special parole pursuant to subsection (b) of section 53a-28 which together constitute a sentence of at least ten years.

**CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-70A (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE: CLASS B OR A FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of aggravated sexual assault in the first degree when such person commits sexual assault in the first degree as provided in section 53a-70, and in the commission of such offense (1) such person uses or is armed with and threatens the use of or displays or represents by such person's words or conduct that such person possesses a deadly weapon, (2) with intent to disfigure the victim seriously and permanently, or to destroy, amputate or disable permanently a member or organ of the victim's body, such person causes such injury to such victim, (3) under circumstances evincing an extreme indifference to human life such person recklessly engages in conduct which creates a risk of death to the victim, and thereby causes serious physical injury to such victim, or (4) such person is aided by two or more other persons actually present. No person shall be convicted of sexual assault in the first degree and aggravated sexual assault in the first degree upon the same transaction but such person may be charged and prosecuted for both such offenses upon the same information.

(b) Aggravated sexual assault in the first degree is a class B felony or, if the victim of the offense is under sixteen years of age, a class A felony. Any person found guilty under this section shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment of which five years of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court, except that, if such person committed sexual assault in the first degree by violating subdivision (1) of subsection (a) of section 53a-70, and the victim of the offense is under sixteen years of age, twenty years of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court. Any person found guilty under this section shall be sentenced to a period of special parole pursuant to subsection (b) of section 53a-28 of at least five years.

**CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-70B (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN SPOUSAL OR COHABITING RELATIONSHIP: CLASS B FELONY**

(a) For the purposes of this section:

(1) "Sexual intercourse" means vaginal intercourse, anal intercourse, fellatio or cunnilingus between persons regardless of sex. Penetration, however slight, is sufficient to complete vaginal intercourse, anal intercourse or fellatio and does not require emission of semen. Penetration may be committed by an object manipulated by the actor into the genital or anal opening of the victim's body; and

(2) "Use of force" means: (A) Use of a dangerous instrument; or (B) use of actual physical

force or violence or superior physical strength against the victim.

(b) No spouse or cohabitor shall compel the other spouse or cohabitor to engage in sexual intercourse by the use of force against such other spouse or cohabitor, or by the threat of the use of force against such other spouse or cohabitor which reasonably causes such other spouse or cohabitor to fear physical injury.

(c) Any person who violates any provision of this section shall be guilty of a class B felony.

**CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-71 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE: CLASS C OR B FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the second degree when such person engages in sexual intercourse with another person and: (1) Such other person is thirteen years of age or older but under sixteen years of age and the actor is more than three years older than such other person; or (2) such other person is mentally defective to the extent that such other person is unable to consent to such sexual intercourse; or (3) such other person is physically helpless; or (4) such other person is less than eighteen years old and the actor is such person's guardian or otherwise responsible for the general supervision of such person's welfare; or (5) such other person is in custody of law or detained in a hospital or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over such other person; or (6) the actor is a psychotherapist and such other person is (A) a patient of the actor and the sexual intercourse occurs during the psychotherapy session, (B) a patient or former patient of the actor and such patient or former patient is emotionally dependent upon the actor, or (C) a patient or former patient of the actor and the sexual intercourse occurs by means of therapeutic deception; or (7) the actor accomplishes the sexual intercourse by means of false representation that the sexual intercourse is for a bona fide medical purpose by a health care professional; or (8) the actor is a school employee and such other person is a student enrolled in a school in which the actor works or a school under the jurisdiction of the local or regional board of education which employs the actor; or (9) the actor is a coach in an athletic activity or a person who provides intensive, ongoing instruction and such other person is a recipient of coaching or instruction from the actor and (A) is a secondary school student and receives such coaching or instruction in a secondary school setting, or (B) is under eighteen years of age; or (10) the actor is twenty years of age or older and stands in a position of power, authority or supervision over such other person by virtue of the actor's professional, legal, occupational or volunteer status and such other person's participation in a program or activity, and such other person is under eighteen years of age.

(b) Sexual assault in the second degree is a class C felony or, if the victim of the offense is under sixteen years of age, a class B felony, and any person found guilty under this section shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment of which nine months of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court.

**CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-72A (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE: CLASS D OR C FELONY**

Held Unconstitutional by: State v. John M., 894 A.2d 376, 377+, 94 Conn.App. 667, 667+ (Conn.App. Apr 11, 2006) (NO. 25313)

**CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-72B (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE WITH A FIREARM: CLASS C OR B FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the third degree with a firearm when such person commits sexual assault in the third degree as provided in section 53a-72a, and in the commission of such offense, such person uses or is armed with and threatens the use of or displays or represents by such person's words or conduct that such person possesses a pistol, revolver, machine gun, rifle, shotgun or other firearm. No person shall be convicted of sexual assault in the third degree and sexual assault in the third degree with a firearm upon the same transaction but such person may be charged and prosecuted for both such offenses upon the same information.

(b) Sexual assault in the third degree with a firearm is a class C felony or, if the victim of the offense is under sixteen years of age, a class B felony, and any person found guilty under this section shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment of which two years of the sentence imposed may not be suspended or reduced by the court and a period of special parole pursuant to subsection (b) of section 53a-28 which together constitute a sentence of ten years.

**CONN. GEN. STAT. ANN. § 53A-73A (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE: CLASS A MISDEMEANOR OR CLASS D FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the fourth degree when: (1) Such person intentionally subjects another person to sexual contact who is (A) under thirteen years of age and the actor is more than two years older than such other person, or (B) thirteen years of age or older but under fifteen years of age and the actor is more than three years older than such other person, or (C) mentally defective or mentally incapacitated to the extent that such other person is unable to consent to such sexual contact, or (D) physically helpless, or (E) less than eighteen years old and the actor is such other person's guardian or otherwise responsible for the general supervision of such other person's welfare, or (F) in custody of law or detained in a hospital or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over such other person; or (2) such person subjects another person to sexual contact without such other person's consent; or (3) such person engages in sexual contact with an animal or dead body; or (4) such person is a psychotherapist and subjects another person to sexual contact who is (A) a patient of the actor and the sexual contact occurs during the psychotherapy session, or (B) a patient or former patient of the actor and such patient or former patient is emotionally dependent upon the actor, or (C) a patient or

former patient of the actor and the sexual contact occurs by means of therapeutic deception; or (5) such person subjects another person to sexual contact and accomplishes the sexual contact by means of false representation that the sexual contact is for a bona fide medical purpose by a health care professional; or (6) such person is a school employee and subjects another person to sexual contact who is a student enrolled in a school in which the actor works or a school under the jurisdiction of the local or regional board of education which employs the actor; or (7) such person is a coach in an athletic activity or a person who provides intensive, ongoing instruction and subjects another person to sexual contact who is a recipient of coaching or instruction from the actor and (A) is a secondary school student and receives such coaching or instruction in a secondary school setting, or (B) is under eighteen years of age; or (8) such person subjects another person to sexual contact and (A) the actor is twenty years of age or older and stands in a position of power, authority or supervision over such other person by virtue of the actor's professional, legal, occupational or volunteer status and such other person's participation in a program or activity, and (B) such other person is under eighteen years of age.

(b) Sexual assault in the fourth degree is a class A misdemeanor or, if the victim of the offense is under sixteen years of age, a class D felony.

## **DELAWARE**

### **DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 761 (2009). DEFINITIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO SEXUAL OFFENSES**

(a) "Cognitive disability" means a developmental disability that substantially impairs an individual's cognitive abilities including, but not limited to, delirium, dementia and other organic brain disorders for which there is an identifiable pathologic condition, as well as nonorganic brain disorders commonly called functional disorders. "Cognitive disability" also includes conditions of mental retardation, severe cerebral palsy, and any other condition found to be closely related to mental retardation because such condition results in the impairment of general intellectual functioning or adaptive behavior similar to that of persons who have been diagnosed with mental retardation, or such condition requires treatment and services similar to those required for persons who have been diagnosed with mental retardation.

(b) "Cunnilingus" means any oral contact with the female genitalia.

(c) "Fellatio" means any oral contact with the male genitalia.

(d) "Object" means any item, device, instrument, substance or any part of the body. It does not mean a medical instrument used by a licensed medical doctor or nurse for the purpose of diagnosis or treatment.

(e) "Position of trust, authority or supervision over a child" includes, but is not limited to:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

(1) Familial or custodial authority or supervision; or

(2) A teacher, instructor, coach, babysitter, day care provider, or aide or any other person having regular direct contact with children through affiliation with a school, church or religious institution, athletic or charitable organization or any other organization, whether such a person is compensated or acting as a volunteer.

(f) "Sexual contact" means:

(1) Any intentional touching by the defendant of the anus, breast, buttocks or genitalia of another person; or

(2) Any intentional touching of another person with the defendant's anus, breast, buttocks or genitalia; or

(3) Intentionally causing or allowing another person to touch the defendant's anus, breast, buttocks or genitalia

which touching, under the circumstances as viewed by a reasonable person, is intended to be sexual in nature. Sexual contact shall also include touching when covered by clothing.

(g) "Sexual intercourse" means:

(1) Any act of physical union of the genitalia or anus of 1 person with the mouth, anus or genitalia of another person. It occurs upon any penetration, however slight. Ejaculation is not required. This offense encompasses the crimes commonly known as rape and sodomy; or

(2) Any act of cunnilingus or fellatio regardless of whether penetration occurs. Ejaculation is not required.

(h) "Sexual offense" means any offense defined by §§ 763-780 and §§ 1108-1112A, 1352(2) and 1353(2) of this title.

(i) "Sexual penetration" means:

(1) The unlawful placement of an object, as defined in subsection (c) of this section, inside the anus or vagina of another person; or

(2) The unlawful placement of the genitalia or any sexual device inside the mouth of another person.

(j) "Without consent" means:

(1) The defendant compelled the victim to submit by any act of coercion as defined in §§ 791 and 792 of this title, or by force, by gesture, or by threat of death, physical injury, pain or kidnapping to be inflicted upon the victim or a third party, or by any other means which

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS



would compel a reasonable person under the circumstances to submit. It is not required that the victim resist such force or threat to the utmost, or to resist if resistance would be futile or foolhardy, but the victim need resist only to the extent that it is reasonably necessary to make the victim's refusal to consent known to the defendant; or

(2) The defendant knew that the victim was unconscious, asleep or otherwise unaware that a sexual act was being performed; or

(3) The defendant knew that the victim suffered from a cognitive disability, mental illness or mental defect which rendered the victim incapable of appraising the nature of the sexual conduct or incapable of consenting; or

(4) Where the defendant is a health professional, as defined herein, or a minister, priest, rabbi or other member of a religious organization engaged in pastoral counseling, the commission of acts of sexual contact, sexual penetration or sexual intercourse by such person shall be deemed to be without consent of the victim where such acts are committed under the guise of providing professional diagnosis, counseling or treatment and where at the times of such acts the victim reasonably believed the acts were for medically or professionally appropriate diagnosis, counseling or treatment, such that resistance by the victim could not reasonably have been manifested. For purposes of this paragraph, "health professional" includes all individuals who are licensed or who hold themselves out to be licensed or who otherwise provide professional physical or mental health services, diagnosis, treatment or counseling and shall include, but not be limited to, doctors of medicine and osteopathy, dentists, nurses, physical therapists, chiropractors, psychologists, social workers, medical technicians, mental health counselors, substance abuse counselors, marriage and family counselors or therapists and hypnotherapists; or

(5) The defendant had substantially impaired the victim's power to appraise or control the victim's own conduct by administering or employing without the other person's knowledge or against the other person's will, drugs, intoxicants or other means for the purpose of preventing resistance.

(k) A child who has not yet reached that child's sixteenth birthday is deemed unable to consent to a sexual act with a person more than 4 years older than said child. Children who have not yet reached their twelfth birthday are deemed unable to consent to a sexual act under any circumstances.

## **DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 762 (2009). PROVISIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO SEXUAL OFFENSES**

(a) Mistake as to age.--Whenever in the definition of a sexual offense, the criminality of conduct or the degree of the offense depends on whether the person has reached that person's sixteenth birthday, it is no defense that the actor did not know the person's age, or that the actor reasonably believed that the person had reached that person's sixteenth birthday.

(b) Gender.--Unless a contrary meaning is clearly required, the male pronoun shall be deemed to refer to both male and female.

(c) Separate acts of sexual contact, penetration and sexual intercourse. --Nothing in this title precludes a defendant from being charged with separate offenses when multiple acts of sexual contact, penetration or intercourse are committed against the same victim.

(d) Teenage defendant.--As to sexual offenses in which the victim's age is an element of the offense because the victim has not yet reached that victim's sixteenth birthday, where the person committing the sexual act is no more than 4 years older than the victim, it is an affirmative defense that the victim consented to the act "knowingly" as defined in § 231 of this title. Sexual conduct pursuant to this section will not be a crime. This affirmative defense will not apply if the victim had not yet reached that victim's twelfth birthday at the time of the act.

## **DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 773 (2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE; CLASS A FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of rape in the first degree when the person intentionally engages in sexual intercourse with another person and any of the following circumstances exist:

(1) The sexual intercourse occurs without the victim's consent and during the commission of the crime, or during the immediate flight following the commission of the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person causes physical injury or serious mental or emotional injury to the victim; or

(2) The sexual intercourse occurs without the victim's consent and it was facilitated by or occurred during the course of the commission or attempted commission of:

a. Any felony; or

b. Any of the following misdemeanors: reckless endangering in the second degree; assault in the third degree; terroristic threatening; unlawfully administering drugs; unlawful imprisonment in the second degree; coercion; or criminal trespass in the first, second or third degree; or

(3) In the course of the commission of rape in the second, third or fourth degree, or while in the immediate flight therefrom, the defendant displayed what appeared to be a deadly weapon or represents by word or conduct that the person is in possession or control of a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument; or

(4) The sexual intercourse occurs without the victim's consent, and a principal-accomplice relationship within the meaning set forth in § 271 of this title existed between the defendant and another person or persons with respect to the commission of the crime; or

(5) The victim has not yet reached that victim's twelfth birthday, and the defendant has reached that defendant's eighteenth birthday; or

(6) The victim has not yet reached that victim's sixteenth birthday and the defendant stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child, or is an invitee or designee of a person who stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child.

(b) Nothing contained in this section shall preclude a separate charge, conviction and sentence for any other crime set forth in this title, or in the Delaware Code.

(c) Notwithstanding any law to the contrary, a person convicted of rape in the first degree shall be sentenced to life imprisonment without benefit of probation, parole or any other reduction if:

(1) The victim had not yet reached that victim's sixteenth birthday at the time of the offense and the person inflicts serious physical injury on the victim; or

(2) The person intentionally causes serious and prolonged disfigurement to the victim permanently, or intentionally destroys, amputates or permanently disables a member or organ of the victim's body; or

(3) The person is convicted of rape against 3 or more separate victims; or

(4) The person has previously been convicted of unlawful sexual intercourse in the first degree, rape in the second degree or rape in the first degree, or any equivalent offense under the laws of this State, any other state or the United States.

Rape in the first degree is a class A felony.

## **DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 772 (2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE; CLASS B FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of rape in the second degree when the person:

(1) Intentionally engages in sexual intercourse with another person, and the intercourse occurs without the victim's consent; or

(2) Intentionally engages in sexual penetration with another person under any of the following circumstances:

a. The sexual penetration occurs without the victim's consent and during the commission of the crime, or during the immediate flight following the commission of the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person causes serious physical injury to the victim; or

b. The sexual penetration occurs without the victim's consent, and was facilitated by or occurred during the course of the commission or attempted commission of:

1. Any felony; or

2. Any of the following misdemeanors: reckless endangering in the second degree; assault in the third degree; terroristic threatening; unlawfully administering drugs; unlawful imprisonment in the second degree; coercion or criminal trespass in the first, second or third degree; or

c. The victim has not yet reached that victim's sixteenth birthday and during the commission of the crime, or during the immediate flight from the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person causes serious physical injury to the victim; or

d. The sexual penetration occurs without the victim's consent and during the commission of the crime, or during the immediate flight from the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person displays what appears to be a deadly weapon or represents by word or conduct that the person is in possession or control of a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument; or

e. The victim has not yet reached that victim's sixteenth birthday and during the commission of the crime, or during the immediate flight from the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person displays what appears to be a deadly weapon or represents by word or conduct that the person is in possession or control of a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument; or

f. The sexual penetration occurs without the victim's consent, and a principal-accomplice relationship within the meaning set forth in § 271 of this title existed between the defendant and another person or persons with respect to the commission of the crime; or

g. The victim has not yet reached that victim's twelfth birthday, and the defendant has reached that defendant's eighteenth birthday; or

h. The victim has not yet reached that victim's sixteenth birthday and the defendant stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child, or is an invitee or designee of a person who stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child.

(b) Nothing in this section shall preclude a separate charge, conviction and sentence for any other crime set forth in this title, or in the Delaware Code.

(c) Notwithstanding any provision of this title to the contrary, the minimum sentence for a person convicted of rape in the second degree in violation of this section shall be 10 years at Level V.

Rape in the second degree is a class B felony.

**DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 771 (2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE; CLASS B FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of rape in the third degree when the person:

(1) Intentionally engages in sexual intercourse with another person, and the victim has not reached that victim's sixteenth birthday and the person is at least 10 years older than the victim, or the victim has not yet reached that victim's fourteenth birthday and the person has reached that person's nineteenth birthday and is not otherwise subject to prosecution pursuant to § 772 or § 773 of this title; or

(2) Intentionally engages in sexual penetration with another person under any of the following circumstances:

a. The sexual penetration occurs without the victim's consent and during the commission of the crime, or during the immediate flight from the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person causes physical injury or serious mental or emotional injury to the victim; or

b. The victim has not reached that victim's sixteenth birthday and during the commission of the crime, or during the immediate flight from the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person causes physical injury or serious mental or emotional injury to the victim.

(b) Paragraph (a)(2) of this section does not apply to a licensed medical doctor or nurse who places 1 or more fingers or an object inside a vagina or anus for the purpose of diagnosis or treatment, or to a law-enforcement officer who is engaged in the lawful performance of his or her duties.

(c) Notwithstanding any law to the contrary, in any case in which a violation of subsection (a) of this section has resulted in the birth of a child who is in the custody and care of the victim or the victim's legal guardian or guardians, the court shall order that the defendant, as a condition of any probation imposed pursuant to a conviction under this section, timely pay any child support ordered by the Family Court for such child.

(d) Nothing in this section shall preclude a separate charge, conviction and sentence for any other crime set forth in this title, or in the Delaware Code.

Rape in the third degree is a class B felony.

**DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 770 (2009). RAPE IN THE FOURTH DEGREE; CLASS C FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of rape in the fourth degree when the person:

(1) Intentionally engages in sexual intercourse with another person, and the victim has not yet reached his or her sixteenth birthday; or

(2) Intentionally engages in sexual intercourse with another person, and the victim has not yet reached his or her eighteenth birthday, and the person is 30 years of age or older, except that such intercourse shall not be unlawful if the victim and person are married at the time of such intercourse; or

(3) Intentionally engages in sexual penetration with another person under any of the following circumstances:

a. The sexual penetration occurs without the victim's consent; or

b. The victim has not reached his or her sixteenth birthday; or

(4) Intentionally engages in sexual intercourse or sexual penetration with another person, and the victim has reached his or her sixteenth birthday but has not yet reached his or her eighteenth birthday and the defendant stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child, or is an invitee or designee of a person who stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child.

(b) Paragraphs (a)(3) and (a)(4) of this section do not apply to a licensed medical doctor or nurse who places 1 or more fingers or an object inside a vagina or anus for the purpose of diagnosis or treatment or to a law enforcement officer who is engaged in the lawful performance of his or her duties.

Rape in the fourth degree is a class C felony.

## **DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 769 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE FIRST DEGREE; CLASS D FELONY**

(a) A person is guilty of unlawful sexual contact in the first degree when:

(1) In the course of committing unlawful sexual contact in the third degree or in the course of committing unlawful sexual contact in the second degree, or during the immediate flight from the crime, or during an attempt to prevent the reporting of the crime, the person causes physical injury to the victim or the person displays what appears to be a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument; or represents by word or conduct that the person is in possession or control of a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument.

(2) The person intentionally has sexual contact with another person who has not yet reached that person's sixteenth birthday and the defendant stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child, or is an invitee or designee of a person who stands in a position of trust, authority or supervision over the child.

(3) The person intentionally has sexual contact with another person who is less than 13 years of age or causes the victim to have sexual contact with the person or a third person.

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(b) Unlawful sexual contact in the first degree is a class D felony.

**DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 768 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE SECOND DEGREE; CLASS F FELONY**

A person is guilty of unlawful sexual contact in the second degree when the person intentionally has sexual contact with another person who is less than 18 years of age or causes the victim to have sexual contact with the person or a third person.

Unlawful sexual contact in the second degree is a class F felony.

**DEL. CODE ANN. tit. 11, § 767 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE THIRD DEGREE; CLASS A MISDEMEANOR**

A person is guilty of unlawful sexual contact in the third degree when the person has sexual contact with another person or causes the victim to have sexual contact with the person or a third person and the person knows that the contact is either offensive to the victim or occurs without the victim's consent.

Unlawful sexual contact in the third degree is a class A misdemeanor.

## **DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA**

**D.C. CODE § 22-3002 (2009). FIRST DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE**

(a) A person shall be imprisoned for any term of years or for life, and in addition, may be fined in an amount not to exceed \$250,000, if that person engages in or causes another person to engage in or submit to a sexual act in the following manner:

- (1) By using force against that other person;
- (2) By threatening or placing that other person in reasonable fear that any person will be subjected to death, bodily injury, or kidnapping;
- (3) After rendering that other person unconscious; or
- (4) After administering to that other person by force or threat of force, or without the knowledge or permission of that other person, a drug, intoxicant, or other similar substance that substantially impairs the ability of that other person to appraise or control his or her conduct.

(b) The court may impose a prison sentence in excess of 30 years only in accordance with § 22-3020 or § 24-403.01(b-2). For purposes of imprisonment following revocation of release authorized by § 24-403.01(b)(7), the offense defined by this section is a Class A felony.

### **D.C. CODE § 22-3003 (2009). SECOND DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE**

A person shall be imprisoned for not more than 20 years and may be fined in an amount not to exceed \$200,000, if that person engages in or causes another person to engage in or submit to a sexual act in the following manner:

(1) By threatening or placing that other person in reasonable fear (other than by threatening or placing that other person in reasonable fear that any person will be subjected to death, bodily injury, or kidnapping); or

(2) Where the person knows or has reason to know that the other person is:

(A) Incapable of appraising the nature of the conduct;

(B) Incapable of declining participation in that sexual act; or

(C) Incapable of communicating unwillingness to engage in that sexual act.

### **D.C. CODE § 22-3004 (2009). THIRD DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE**

A person shall be imprisoned for not more than 10 years and may be fined in an amount not to exceed \$100,000, if that person engages in or causes sexual contact with or by another person in the following manner:

(1) By using force against that other person;

(2) By threatening or placing that other person in reasonable fear that any person will be subjected to death, bodily injury, or kidnapping;

(3) After rendering that person unconscious; or

(4) After administering to that person by force or threat of force, or without the knowledge or permission of that other person, a drug, intoxicant, or similar substance that substantially impairs the ability of that other person to appraise or control his or her conduct.



## **D.C. CODE § 22-3005 (2009). FOURTH DEGREE SEXUAL ABUSE**

A person shall be imprisoned for not more than 5 years and, in addition, may be fined in an amount not to exceed \$50,000, if that person engages in or causes sexual contact with or by another person in the following manner:

(1) By threatening or placing that other person in reasonable fear (other than by threatening or placing that other person in reasonable fear that any person will be subjected to death, bodily injury, or kidnapping); or

(2) Where the person knows or has reason to know that the other person is:

(A) Incapable of appraising the nature of the conduct;

(B) Incapable of declining participation in that sexual contact; or

(C) Incapable of communicating unwillingness to engage in that sexual contact.

## **D.C. CODE § 22-3006 (2009). MISDEMEANOR SEXUAL ABUSE**

Whoever engages in a sexual act or sexual contact with another person and who should have knowledge or reason to know that the act was committed without that other person's permission, shall be imprisoned for not more than 180 days and, in addition, may be fined in an amount not to exceed \$1,000.

## **D.C. CODE § 22-3007 (2009). DEFENSE TO SEXUAL ABUSE**

Consent by the victim is a defense, which the defendant must establish by a preponderance of the evidence, to a prosecution under §§ 22-3002 to 22-3006, prosecuted alone or in conjunction with charges under § 22-3018 or §§ 22-401 and 22-403.

## **D.C. CODE § 22-3019 (2009). NO SPOUSAL IMMUNITY FROM PROSECUTION**

No actor is immune from prosecution under any section of this subchapter because of marriage, domestic partnership, or cohabitation with the victim; provided, that marriage or the domestic partnership of the parties may be asserted as an affirmative defense in prosecution under this subchapter where it is expressly so provided.

## **FLORIDA**

### **FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.005 (West 2009). LEGISLATIVE FINDINGS AND INTENT AS TO BASIC CHARGE OF SEXUAL BATTERY**

The Legislature finds that the least serious sexual battery offense, which is provided in s. 794.011(5), was intended, and remains intended, to serve as the basic charge of sexual battery and to be necessarily included in the offenses charged under subsections (3) and (4), within the meaning of s. 924.34; and that it was never intended that the sexual battery offense described in s. 794.011(5) require any force or violence beyond the force and violence that is inherent in the accomplishment of “penetration” or “union.”

### **FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.011 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

(1) As used in this chapter:

(a) “Consent” means intelligent, knowing, and voluntary consent and does not include coerced submission. “Consent” shall not be deemed or construed to mean the failure by the alleged victim to offer physical resistance to the offender.

(b) “Mentally defective” means a mental disease or defect which renders a person temporarily or permanently incapable of appraising the nature of his or her conduct.

(c) “Mentally incapacitated” means temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling a person's own conduct due to the influence of a narcotic, anesthetic, or intoxicating substance administered without his or her consent or due to any other act committed upon that person without his or her consent.

(d) “Offender” means a person accused of a sexual offense in violation of a provision of this chapter.

(e) “Physically helpless” means unconscious, asleep, or for any other reason physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

(f) "Retaliation" includes, but is not limited to, threats of future physical punishment, kidnapping, false imprisonment or forcible confinement, or extortion.

(g) "Serious personal injury" means great bodily harm or pain, permanent disability, or permanent disfigurement.

(h) "Sexual battery" means oral, anal, or vaginal penetration by, or union with, the sexual organ of another or the anal or vaginal penetration of another by any other object; however, sexual battery does not include an act done for a bona fide medical purpose.

(i) "Victim" means a person who has been the object of a sexual offense.

(j) "Physically incapacitated" means bodily impaired or handicapped and substantially limited in ability to resist or flee.

(2)(a) A person 18 years of age or older who commits sexual battery upon, or in an attempt to commit sexual battery injures the sexual organs of, a person less than 12 years of age commits a capital felony, punishable as provided in ss. 775.082 and 921.141.

(b) A person less than 18 years of age who commits sexual battery upon, or in an attempt to commit sexual battery injures the sexual organs of, a person less than 12 years of age commits a life felony, punishable as provided in s. 775.082, s. 775.083, s. 775.084, or s. 794.0115.

(3) A person who commits sexual battery upon a person 12 years of age or older, without that person's consent, and in the process thereof uses or threatens to use a deadly weapon or uses actual physical force likely to cause serious personal injury commits a life felony, punishable as provided in s. 775.082, s. 775.083, s. 775.084, or s. 794.0115.

(4) A person who commits sexual battery upon a person 12 years of age or older without that person's consent, under any of the following circumstances, commits a felony of the first degree, punishable as provided in s. 775.082, s. 775.083, s. 775.084, or s. 794.0115:

(a) When the victim is physically helpless to resist.

(b) When the offender coerces the victim to submit by threatening to use force or violence likely to cause serious personal injury on the victim, and the victim reasonably believes that the offender has the present ability to execute the threat.

(c) When the offender coerces the victim to submit by threatening to retaliate against the victim, or any other person, and the victim reasonably believes that the offender has the ability to execute the threat in the future.

(d) When the offender, without the prior knowledge or consent of the victim, administers or has knowledge of someone else administering to the victim any narcotic, anesthetic, or other intoxicating substance which mentally or physically incapacitates the victim.

(e) When the victim is mentally defective and the offender has reason to believe this or has actual knowledge of this fact.

(f) When the victim is physically incapacitated.

(g) When the offender is a law enforcement officer, correctional officer, or correctional probation officer as defined by s. 943.10(1), (2), (3), (6), (7), (8), or (9), who is certified under the provisions of s. 943.1395 or is an elected official exempt from such certification by virtue of s. 943.253, or any other person in a position of control or authority in a probation, community control, controlled release, detention, custodial, or similar setting, and such officer, official, or person is acting in such a manner as to lead the victim to reasonably believe that the offender is in a position of control or authority as an agent or employee of government.

(5) A person who commits sexual battery upon a person 12 years of age or older, without that person's consent, and in the process thereof does not use physical force and violence likely to cause serious personal injury commits a felony of the second degree, punishable as provided in s. 775.082, s. 775.083, s. 775.084, or s. 794.0115.

(6) The offense described in subsection (5) is included in any sexual battery offense charged under subsection (3) or subsection (4).

(7) A person who is convicted of committing a sexual battery on or after October 1, 1992, is not eligible for basic gain-time under s. 944.275. This subsection may be cited as the "Junny Rios-Martinez, Jr. Act of 1992."

(8) Without regard to the willingness or consent of the victim, which is not a defense to prosecution under this subsection, a person who is in a position of familial or custodial authority to a person less than 18 years of age and who:

(a) Solicits that person to engage in any act which would constitute sexual battery under paragraph (1)(h) commits a felony of the third degree, punishable as provided in s. 775.082, s. 775.083, or s. 775.084.

(b) Engages in any act with that person while the person is 12 years of age or older but less than 18 years of age which constitutes sexual battery under paragraph (1)(h) commits a felony of the first degree, punishable as provided in s. 775.082, s. 775.083, or s. 775.084.

(c) Engages in any act with that person while the person is less than 12 years of age which constitutes sexual battery under paragraph (1)(h), or in an attempt to commit sexual battery injures the sexual organs of such person commits a capital or life felony, punishable pursuant to subsection (2).

(9) For prosecution under paragraph (4)(g), acquiescence to a person reasonably believed by the victim to be in a position of authority or control does not constitute consent, and it is not a defense that the perpetrator was not actually in a position of control or authority if the circumstances were such as to lead the victim to reasonably believe that the person was in such a position.

---

**RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**

(10) Any person who falsely accuses any person listed in paragraph (4)(g) or other person in a position of control or authority as an agent or employee of government of violating paragraph (4)(g) is guilty of a felony of the third degree, punishable as provided in s. 775.082, s. 775.083, or s. 775.084.

### **FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.023 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY BY MULTIPLE PERPETRATORS; RECLASSIFICATION OF OFFENSES**

(1) The Legislature finds that an act of sexual battery, when committed by more than one person, presents a great danger to the public and is extremely offensive to civilized society. It is therefore the intent of the Legislature to reclassify offenses for acts of sexual battery committed by more than one person.

(2) A violation of s. 794.011 shall be reclassified as provided in this subsection if it is charged and proven by the prosecution that, during the same criminal transaction or episode, more than one person committed an act of sexual battery on the same victim.

(a) A felony of the second degree is reclassified to a felony of the first degree.

(b) A felony of the first degree is reclassified to a life felony.

This subsection does not apply to life felonies or capital felonies. For purposes of sentencing under chapter 921 and determining incentive gain-time eligibility under chapter 944, a felony offense that is reclassified under this subsection is ranked one level above the ranking under s. 921.0022 or s. 921.0023 of the offense committed.

### **FLA. STAT. ANN. § 794.021 (West 2009). IGNORANCE OR BELIEF AS TO VICTIM'S AGE NO DEFENSE**

When, in this chapter, the criminality of conduct depends upon the victim's being below a certain specified age, ignorance of the age is no defense. Neither shall misrepresentation of age by such person nor a bona fide belief that such person is over the specified age be a defense.

## **GEORGIA**

### **GA. CODE ANN. § 16-6-1 (West 2009). RAPE**

(a) A person commits the offense of rape when he has carnal knowledge of:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

(1) A female forcibly and against her will; or

(2) A female who is less than ten years of age.

Carnal knowledge in rape occurs when there is any penetration of the female sex organ by the male sex organ. The fact that the person allegedly raped is the wife of the defendant shall not be a defense to a charge of rape.

(b) A person convicted of the offense of rape shall be punished by death, by imprisonment for life without parole, by imprisonment for life, or by a split sentence that is a term of imprisonment for not less than 25 years and not exceeding life imprisonment, followed by probation for life. Any person convicted under this Code section shall, in addition, be subject to the sentencing and punishment provisions of Code Sections 17-10-6.1 and 17-10-7.

(c) When evidence relating to an allegation of rape is collected in the course of a medical examination of the person who is the victim of the alleged crime, the law enforcement agency investigating the alleged crime shall be responsible for the cost of the medical examination to the extent that expense is incurred for the limited purpose of collecting evidence.

## **GA. CODE ANN. § 16-6-2 (West 2009). SODOMY; AGGRAVATED SODOMY**

(a)(1) A person commits the offense of sodomy when he or she performs or submits to any sexual act involving the sex organs of one person and the mouth or anus of another.

(2) A person commits the offense of aggravated sodomy when he or she commits sodomy with force and against the will of the other person or when he or she commits sodomy with a person who is less than ten years of age. The fact that the person allegedly sodomized is the spouse of a defendant shall not be a defense to a charge of aggravated sodomy.

(b)(1) Except as provided in subsection (d) of this Code section, a person convicted of the offense of sodomy shall be punished by imprisonment for not less than one nor more than 20 years and shall be subject to the sentencing and punishment provisions of Code Section 17-10-6.2.

(2) A person convicted of the offense of aggravated sodomy shall be punished by imprisonment for life or by a split sentence that is a term of imprisonment for not less than 25 years and not exceeding life imprisonment, followed by probation for life. Any person convicted under this Code section of the offense of aggravated sodomy shall, in addition, be subject to the sentencing and punishment provisions of Code Sections 17-10-6.1 and 17-10-7.

(c) When evidence relating to an allegation of aggravated sodomy is collected in the course of a medical examination of the person who is the victim of the alleged crime, the law enforcement agency investigating the alleged crime shall be financially responsible for the

---

### **RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**

cost of the medical examination to the extent that expense is incurred for the limited purpose of collecting evidence.

(d) If the victim is at least 13 but less than 16 years of age and the person convicted of sodomy is 18 years of age or younger and is no more than four years older than the victim, such person shall be guilty of a misdemeanor and shall not be subject to the sentencing and punishment provisions of Code Section 17-10-6.2.

## **GA. CODE ANN. § 16-6-5.1 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) As used in this Code section, the term:

(1) “Actor” means a person accused of sexual assault.

(2) “Intimate parts” means the genital area, groin, inner thighs, buttocks, or breasts of a person.

(3) “Psychotherapy” means the professional treatment or counseling of a mental or emotional illness, symptom, or condition.

(4) “Sexual contact” means any contact between the actor and a person not married to the actor involving the intimate parts of either person for the purpose of sexual gratification of the actor.

(b) A probation or parole officer or other custodian or supervisor of another person referred to in this Code section commits sexual assault when he or she engages in sexual contact with another person who is a probationer or parolee under the supervision of said probation or parole officer or who is in the custody of law or who is enrolled in a school or who is detained in or is a patient in a hospital or other institution and such actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over such other person. A person convicted of sexual assault shall be punished by imprisonment for not less than ten nor more than 30 years; provided, however, that any person convicted of the offense of sexual assault under this subsection of a child under the age of 14 years shall be punished by imprisonment for not less than 25 nor more than 50 years. Any person convicted under this subsection of the offense of sexual assault shall, in addition, be subject to the sentencing and punishment provisions of Code Section 17-10-6.2.

(c)(1) A person commits sexual assault when such person has supervisory or disciplinary authority over another person and such person engages in sexual contact with that other person who is:

(A) In the custody of law; or

(B) Detained in or is a patient in a hospital or other institution.

(2) A person commits sexual assault when, as an actual or purported practitioner of psychotherapy, he or she engages in sexual contact with another person who the actor knew or should have known is the subject of the actor's actual or purported treatment or counseling, or, if the treatment or counseling relationship was used to facilitate sexual contact between the actor and said person.

(3) Consent of the victim shall not be a defense to a prosecution under this subsection.

(4) A person convicted of sexual assault under this subsection shall be punished by imprisonment for not less than ten nor more than 30 years; provided, however, that any person convicted of the offense of sexual assault under this subsection of a child under the age of 14 years shall be punished by imprisonment for not less than 25 nor more than 50 years. Any person convicted under this subsection of the offense of sexual assault shall, in addition, be subject to the sentencing and punishment provisions of Code Section 17-10-6.2.

(d) A person who is an employee, agent, or volunteer at any facility licensed or required to be licensed under Code Section 31-7-3, relating to long-term care facilities, or Code Section 31-7-12, relating to personal care homes, or who is required to be licensed pursuant to Code Section 31-7-151 or 31-7-173, relating to home health care and hospices, commits sexual assault when such person engages in sexual contact with another person who has been admitted to or is receiving services from such facility, person, or entity. A person convicted of sexual assault pursuant to this subsection shall be punished by imprisonment for not less than ten nor more than 30 years, or a fine of not more than \$5,000.00, or both. Any violation of this subsection shall constitute a separate offense. Any person convicted under this subsection of the offense of sexual assault shall, in addition, be subject to the sentencing and punishment provisions of Code Section 17-10-6.2.

## HAWAII

### HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-700 (2009). DEFINITIONS OF TERMS IN THIS CHAPTER

In this chapter, unless a different meaning plainly is required:

“Bodily injury” means physical pain, illness, or any impairment of physical condition.

“Compulsion” means absence of consent, or a threat, express or implied, that places a person in fear of public humiliation, property damage, or financial loss.

“Dangerous instrument” means any firearm, whether loaded or not, and whether operable or not, or other weapon, device, instrument, material, or substance, whether animate or inanimate, which in the manner it is used or is intended to be used is known to be capable of producing death or serious bodily injury.



“Deviate sexual intercourse” means any act of sexual gratification between a person and an animal or a corpse, involving the sex organs of one and the mouth, anus, or sex organs of the other.

“Emergency worker” means any:

(1) Law enforcement officer, including but not limited to any police officer, public safety officer, parole or probation officer, or any other officer of any county, state, federal, or military agency authorized to exercise law enforcement or police powers;

(2) Firefighter, emergency medical services personnel, emergency medical technician, ambulance crewmember, or any other emergency response personnel;

(3) Member of the Hawaii national guard on any duty or service done under or in pursuance of an order or call of the governor or the President of the United States or any proper authority;

(4) Member of the United States Army, Air Force, Navy, Marines, or Coast Guard on any duty or service done under or in pursuance of an order or call of the President of the United States or any proper authority;

(5) Member of the national guard from any other state ordered into service by any proper authority;

(6) Person engaged in civil defense functions as authorized by the director of civil defense or as otherwise authorized under chapter 128; or

(7) Person engaged in disaster relief by authorization of the director of disaster relief or as otherwise authorized under chapter 127.

“Labor” means work of economic or financial value.

“Married” includes persons legally married, and a male and female living together as husband and wife regardless of their legal status, but does not include spouses living apart.

“Mentally defective” means a person suffering from a disease, disorder, or defect which renders the person incapable of appraising the nature of the person's conduct.

“Mentally incapacitated” means a person rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling the person's conduct as a result of the influence of a substance administered to the person without the person's consent.

“Person” means a human being who has been born and is alive.

“Physically helpless” means a person who is unconscious or for any other reason physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

“Relative” means parent, ancestor, brother, sister, uncle, aunt, or legal guardian.

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

“Restrain” means to restrict a person's movement in such a manner as to interfere substantially with the person's liberty:

- (1) By means of force, threat, or deception; or
- (2) If the person is under the age of eighteen or incompetent, without the consent of the relative, person, or institution having lawful custody of the person.

“Serious bodily injury” means bodily injury which creates a substantial risk of death or which causes serious, permanent disfigurement, or protracted loss or impairment of the function of any bodily member or organ.

“Services” means a relationship between a person and the actor in which the person performs activities under the supervision of or for the benefit of the actor. Prostitution-related and obscenity-related activities as set forth in chapter 712 are forms of “services” under this section. Nothing in this chapter shall be construed to legitimize or legalize prostitution.

“Sexual contact” means any touching, other than acts of “sexual penetration”, of the sexual or other intimate parts of a person not married to the actor, or of the sexual or other intimate parts of the actor by the person, whether directly or through the clothing or other material intended to cover the sexual or other intimate parts.

“Sexual penetration” means:

- (1) Vaginal intercourse, anal intercourse, fellatio, deviate sexual intercourse, or any intrusion of any part of a person's body or of any object into the genital or anal opening of another person's body; it occurs upon any penetration, however slight, but emission is not required. As used in this definition, “genital opening” includes the anterior surface of the vulva or labia majora; or
- (2) Cunnilingus or anilingus, whether or not actual penetration has occurred.

For purposes of this chapter, each act of sexual penetration shall constitute a separate offense.

“Strong compulsion” means the use of or attempt to use one or more of the following to overcome a person:

- (1) A threat, express or implied, that places a person in fear of bodily injury to the individual or another person, or in fear that the person or another person will be kidnapped;
- (2) A dangerous instrument; or
- (3) Physical force.

“Substantial bodily injury” means bodily injury which causes:

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

- (1) A major avulsion, laceration, or penetration of the skin;
- (2) A burn of at least second degree severity;
- (3) A bone fracture;
- (4) A serious concussion; or
- (5) A tearing, rupture, or corrosive damage to the esophagus, viscera, or other internal organs.

### **HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-730 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN FIRST DEGREE**

- (1) A person commits the offense of sexual assault in the first degree if:
  - (a) The person knowingly subjects another person to an act of sexual penetration by strong compulsion;
  - (b) The person knowingly engages in sexual penetration with another person who is less than fourteen years old;
  - (c) The person knowingly engages in sexual penetration with a person who is at least fourteen years old but less than sixteen years old; provided that:
    - (i) The person is not less than five years older than the minor; and
    - (ii) The person is not legally married to the minor;
  - (d) The person knowingly subjects to sexual penetration another person who is mentally defective; or
  - (e) The person knowingly subjects to sexual penetration another person who is mentally incapacitated or physically helpless as a result of the influence of a substance that the actor knowingly caused to be administered to the other person without the other person's consent.

### **HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-731 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

- (1) A person commits the offense of sexual assault in the second degree if:
  - (a) The person knowingly subjects another person to an act of sexual penetration by compulsion;

(b) The person knowingly subjects to sexual penetration another person who is mentally incapacitated or physically helpless; or

(c) The person, while employed:

(i) In a state correctional facility;

(ii) By a private company providing services at a correctional facility;

(iii) By a private company providing community-based residential services to persons committed to the director of public safety and having received notice of this statute;

(iv) By a private correctional facility operating in the State of Hawaii; or

(v) As a law enforcement officer as defined in section 710-1000(13),

knowingly subjects to sexual penetration an imprisoned person, a person confined to a detention facility, a person committed to the director of public safety, a person residing in a private correctional facility operating in the State of Hawaii, or a person in custody; provided that paragraph (b) and this paragraph shall not be construed to prohibit practitioners licensed under chapter 453 or 455 from performing any act within their respective practices; and further provided that this paragraph shall not be construed to prohibit a law enforcement officer from performing a lawful search pursuant to a warrant or exception to the warrant clause.

(2) Sexual assault in the second degree is a class B felony.

## **HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-732 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(1) A person commits the offense of sexual assault in the third degree if:

(a) The person recklessly subjects another person to an act of sexual penetration by compulsion;

(b) The person knowingly subjects to sexual contact another person who is less than fourteen years old or causes such a person to have sexual contact with the person;

(c) The person knowingly engages in sexual contact with a person who is at least fourteen years old but less than sixteen years old or causes the minor to have sexual contact with the person; provided that:

(i) The person is not less than five years older than the minor; and

(ii) The person is not legally married to the minor;

## **HAW. REV. STAT. § 707-733 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE**

(1) A person commits the offense of sexual assault in the fourth degree if:

- (a) The person knowingly subjects another person to sexual contact by compulsion or causes another person to have sexual contact with the actor by compulsion;
- (b) The person knowingly exposes the person's genitals to another person under circumstances in which the actor's conduct is likely to alarm the other person or put the other person in fear of bodily injury; or
- (c) The person knowingly trespasses on property for the purpose of subjecting another person to surreptitious surveillance for the sexual gratification of the actor.

(2) Sexual assault in the fourth degree is a misdemeanor.

(3) Whenever a court sentences a defendant for an offense under this section, the court may order the defendant to submit to a pre-sentence mental and medical examination pursuant to section 706-603.

## **IDAHO**

### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6101 (2009). RAPE DEFINED**

Rape is defined as the penetration, however slight, of the oral, anal or vaginal opening with the perpetrator's penis accomplished with a female under any one (1) of the following circumstances:

1. Where the female is under the age of eighteen (18) years.
2. Where she is incapable, through any unsoundness of mind, due to any cause including, but not limited to, mental illness, mental deficiency or developmental disability, whether temporary or permanent, of giving legal consent.
3. Where she resists but her resistance is overcome by force or violence.
4. Where she is prevented from resistance by the infliction, attempted infliction, or threatened infliction of bodily harm, accompanied by apparent power of execution; or is unable to resist due to any intoxicating, narcotic, or anaesthetic substance.
5. Where she is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act. As used in this section, "unconscious of the nature of the act" means incapable of resisting because the victim meets one (1) of the following conditions:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(a) Was unconscious or asleep;

(b) Was not aware, knowing, perceiving, or cognizant that the act occurred.

6. Where she submits under the belief that the person committing the act is her husband, and the belief is induced by artifice, pretense or concealment practiced by the accused, with intent to induce such belief.

7. Where she submits under the belief, instilled by the actor, that if she does not submit, the actor will cause physical harm to some person in the future; or cause damage to property; or engage in other conduct constituting a crime; or accuse any person of a crime or cause criminal charges to be instituted against her; or expose a secret or publicize an asserted fact, whether true or false, tending to subject any person to hatred, contempt or ridicule.

### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6102 (2009). PROOF OF PHYSICAL ABILITY**

No conviction for rape can be had against one who was under the age of fourteen (14) years at the time of the act alleged, unless his physical ability to accomplish penetration is proved as an independent fact, and beyond a reasonable doubt.

### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6103 (2009). PENETRATION**

The essential guilt of rape consists in the outrage to the person and feelings of the female. Any sexual penetration, however slight, is sufficient to complete the crime.

### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6104 (2009). PUNISHMENT FOR RAPE**

Rape is punishable by imprisonment in the state prison not less than one (1) year, and the imprisonment may be extended to life in the discretion of the District Judge, who shall pass sentence.

### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6107 (2009). RAPE OF SPOUSE**

No person shall be convicted of rape for any act or acts with that person's spouse, except under the circumstances cited in paragraphs 3. and 4. of section 18-6101, Idaho Code

### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6108 (2009). MALE RAPE**

Male rape is defined as the penetration, however slight, of the oral or anal opening of another male, with the perpetrator's penis, for the purpose of sexual arousal, gratification or abuse, under any of the following circumstances:

1. Where the victim is incapable, through any unsoundness of mind, whether temporary or permanent, of giving consent.
2. Where the victim resists but his resistance is overcome by force or violence.
3. Where the victim is prevented from resistance by threats of immediate and great bodily harm, accompanied by apparent power of execution.
4. Where the victim is prevented from resistance by the use of any intoxicating, narcotic, or anaesthetic substance administered by or with the privity of the accused.
5. Where the victim is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act, and this is known to the accused.

#### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6608 (2009). FORCIBLE SEXUAL PENETRATION BY USE OF FOREIGN OBJECT**

Every person who, for the purpose of sexual arousal, gratification or abuse, causes the penetration, however slight, of the genital or anal opening of another person, by any object, instrument or device, against the victim's will by use of force or violence or by duress, or by threats of immediate and great bodily harm, accompanied by apparent power of execution, or where the victim is incapable, through any unsoundness of mind, whether temporary or permanent, of giving legal consent, or where the victim is prevented from resistance by any intoxicating, narcotic or anesthetic substance, shall be guilty of a felony and shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for not more than life.

#### **IDAHO CODE ANN. § 18-6109 (2009). PUNISHMENT FOR MALE RAPE**

Male rape is punishable by imprisonment in the state prison for not less than one (1) year, and the imprisonment may be extended to life.

## **ILLINOIS**

#### **720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-12 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

<Text of section effective until Jan. 1, 2010. See, also, section effective Jan. 1, 2010.>

§ 12-12. Definitions. For the purposes of Sections 12-13 through 12-18 of this Code, the terms used in these Sections shall have the following meanings ascribed to them:

(a) “Accused” means a person accused of an offense prohibited by Sections 12-13, 12-14, 12-15 or 12-16 of this Code or a person for whose conduct the accused is legally responsible under Article 5 of this Code. [FN1]

(b) “Bodily harm” means physical harm, and includes, but is not limited to, sexually transmitted disease, pregnancy and impotence.

(c) “Family member” means a parent, grandparent, or child, whether by whole blood, half-blood or adoption and includes a step-grandparent, step-parent or step-child. “Family member” also means, where the victim is a child under 18 years of age, an accused who has resided in the household with such child continuously for at least one year.

(d) “Force or threat of force” means the use of force or violence, or the threat of force or violence, including but not limited to the following situations:

(1) when the accused threatens to use force or violence on the victim or on any other person, and the victim under the circumstances reasonably believed that the accused had the ability to execute that threat; or

(2) when the accused has overcome the victim by use of superior strength or size, physical restraint or physical confinement.

(e) “Sexual conduct” means any intentional or knowing touching or fondling by the victim or the accused, either directly or through clothing, of the sex organs, anus or breast of the victim or the accused, or any part of the body of a child under 13 years of age, or any transfer or transmission of semen by the accused upon any part of the clothed or unclothed body of the victim, for the purpose of sexual gratification or arousal of the victim or the accused.

(f) “Sexual penetration” means any contact, however slight, between the sex organ or anus of one person by an object, the sex organ, mouth or anus of another person, or any intrusion, however slight, of any part of the body of one person or of any animal or object into the sex organ or anus of another person, including but not limited to cunnilingus, fellatio or anal penetration. Evidence of emission of semen is not required to prove sexual penetration.

(g) “Victim” means a person alleging to have been subjected to an offense prohibited by Sections 12-13, 12-14, 12-15 or 12-16 of this Code.



## **720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-13 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ASSAULT**

### **§ 12-13. Criminal Sexual Assault.**

(a) The accused commits criminal sexual assault if he or she:

(1) commits an act of sexual penetration by the use of force or threat of force; or

(2) commits an act of sexual penetration and the accused knew that the victim was unable to understand the nature of the act or was unable to give knowing consent; or

(3) commits an act of sexual penetration with a victim who was under 18 years of age when the act was committed and the accused was a family member; or

(4) commits an act of sexual penetration with a victim who was at least 13 years of age but under 18 years of age when the act was committed and the accused was 17 years of age or over and held a position of trust, authority or supervision in relation to the victim.

(b) Sentence.

(1) Criminal sexual assault is a Class 1 felony.

(2) A person who is convicted of the offense of criminal sexual assault as defined in paragraph (a)(1) or (a)(2) after having previously been convicted of the offense of criminal sexual assault or the offense of exploitation of a child, or who is convicted of the offense of criminal sexual assault as defined in paragraph (a)(1) or (a)(2) after having previously been convicted under the laws of this State or any other state of an offense that is substantially equivalent to the offense of criminal sexual assault or to the offense of exploitation of a child, commits a Class X felony for which the person shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment of not less than 30 years and not more than 60 years. The commission of the second or subsequent offense is required to have been after the initial conviction for this paragraph (2) to apply.

(3) A person who is convicted of the offense of criminal sexual assault as defined in paragraph (a)(1) or (a)(2) after having previously been convicted of the offense of aggravated criminal sexual assault or the offense of predatory criminal sexual assault of a child, or who is convicted of the offense of criminal sexual assault as defined in paragraph (a)(1) or (a)(2) after having previously been convicted under the laws of this State or any other state of an offense that is substantially equivalent to the offense of aggravated criminal sexual assault or the offense of criminal predatory sexual assault shall be sentenced to a term of natural life imprisonment. The commission of the second or subsequent offense is required to have been after the initial conviction for this paragraph (3) to apply.

(4) A second or subsequent conviction for a violation of paragraph (a)(3) or (a)(4) or under any similar statute of this State or any other state for any offense involving criminal sexual assault that is substantially equivalent to or more serious than the sexual assault prohibited under paragraph (a)(3) or (a)(4) is a Class X felony.

(5) When a person has any such prior conviction, the information or indictment charging that person shall state such prior conviction so as to give notice of the State's intention to treat the charge as a Class X felony. The fact of such prior conviction is not an element of the offense and may not be disclosed to the jury during trial unless otherwise permitted by issues properly raised during such trial.

## **720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-14 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED CRIMINAL SEXUAL ASSAULT**

### **§ 12-14. Aggravated Criminal Sexual Assault.**

(a) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual assault if he or she commits criminal sexual assault and any of the following aggravating circumstances existed during, or for the purposes of paragraph (7) of this subsection (a) as part of the same course of conduct as, the commission of the offense:

(1) the accused displayed, threatened to use, or used a dangerous weapon, other than a firearm, or any object fashioned or utilized in such a manner as to lead the victim under the circumstances reasonably to believe it to be a dangerous weapon; or

(2) the accused caused bodily harm, except as provided in subsection (a)(10), to the victim; or

(3) the accused acted in such a manner as to threaten or endanger the life of the victim or any other person; or

(4) the criminal sexual assault was perpetrated during the course of the commission or attempted commission of any other felony by the accused; or

(5) the victim was 60 years of age or over when the offense was committed; or

(6) the victim was a physically handicapped person; or

(7) the accused delivered (by injection, inhalation, ingestion, transfer of possession, or any other means) to the victim without his or her consent, or by threat or deception, and for other than medical purposes, any controlled substance; or

(8) the accused was armed with a firearm; or

(9) the accused personally discharged a firearm during the commission of the offense; or

---

#### **RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**

(10) the accused, during the commission of the offense, personally discharged a firearm that proximately caused great bodily harm, permanent disability, permanent disfigurement, or death to another person.

(b) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual assault if the accused was under 17 years of age and (i) commits an act of sexual penetration with a victim who was under 9 years of age when the act was committed; or (ii) commits an act of sexual penetration with a victim who was at least 9 years of age but under 13 years of age when the act was committed and the accused used force or threat of force to commit the act.

(c) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual assault if he or she commits an act of sexual penetration with a victim who was a severely or profoundly mentally retarded person at the time the act was committed.

(d) Sentence.

(1) Aggravated criminal sexual assault in violation of paragraph (2), (3), (4), (5), (6), or (7) of subsection (a) or in violation of subsection (b) or (c) is a Class X felony. A violation of subsection (a)(1) is a Class X felony for which 10 years shall be added to the term of imprisonment imposed by the court. A violation of subsection (a)(8) is a Class X felony for which 15 years shall be added to the term of imprisonment imposed by the court. A violation of subsection (a)(9) is a Class X felony for which 20 years shall be added to the term of imprisonment imposed by the court. A violation of subsection (a)(10) is a Class X felony for which 25 years or up to a term of natural life imprisonment shall be added to the term of imprisonment imposed by the court.

(2) A person who is convicted of a second or subsequent offense of aggravated criminal sexual assault, or who is convicted of the offense of aggravated criminal sexual assault after having previously been convicted of the offense of criminal sexual assault or the offense of predatory criminal sexual assault of a child, or who is convicted of the offense of aggravated criminal sexual assault after having previously been convicted under the laws of this or any other state of an offense that is substantially equivalent to the offense of criminal sexual assault, the offense of aggravated criminal sexual assault or the offense of predatory criminal sexual assault of a child, shall be sentenced to a term of natural life imprisonment. The commission of the second or subsequent offense is required to have been after the initial conviction for this paragraph (2) to apply.

## **720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-15 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ABUSE**

§ 12-15. Criminal sexual abuse.

(a) The accused commits criminal sexual abuse if he or she:

(1) commits an act of sexual conduct by the use of force or threat of force; or

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(2) commits an act of sexual conduct and the accused knew that the victim was unable to understand the nature of the act or was unable to give knowing consent.

(b) The accused commits criminal sexual abuse if the accused was under 17 years of age and commits an act of sexual penetration or sexual conduct with a victim who was at least 9 years of age but under 17 years of age when the act was committed.

(c) The accused commits criminal sexual abuse if he or she commits an act of sexual penetration or sexual conduct with a victim who was at least 13 years of age but under 17 years of age and the accused was less than 5 years older than the victim.

(d) Sentence. Criminal sexual abuse for a violation of subsection (b) or (c) of this Section is a Class A misdemeanor. Criminal sexual abuse for a violation of paragraph (1) or (2) of subsection (a) of this Section is a Class 4 felony. A second or subsequent conviction for a violation of subsection (a) of this Section is a Class 2 felony. For purposes of this Section it is a second or subsequent conviction if the accused has at any time been convicted under this Section or under any similar statute of this State or any other state for any offense involving sexual abuse or sexual assault that is substantially equivalent to or more serious than the sexual abuse prohibited under this Section.

## **720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-16 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED CRIMINAL SEXUAL ABUSE**

### **§ 12-16. Aggravated Criminal Sexual Abuse.**

(a) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual abuse if he or she commits criminal sexual abuse as defined in subsection (a) of Section 12-15 of this Code and any of the following aggravating circumstances existed during, or for the purposes of paragraph (7) of this subsection (a) as part of the same course of conduct as, the commission of the offense:

(1) the accused displayed, threatened to use or used a dangerous weapon or any object fashioned or utilized in such a manner as to lead the victim under the circumstances reasonably to believe it to be a dangerous weapon; or

(2) the accused caused bodily harm to the victim; or

(3) the victim was 60 years of age or over when the offense was committed; or

(4) the victim was a physically handicapped person; or

(5) the accused acted in such a manner as to threaten or endanger the life of the victim or any other person; or

(6) the criminal sexual abuse was perpetrated during the course of the commission or attempted commission of any other felony by the accused; or

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(7) the accused delivered (by injection, inhalation, ingestion, transfer of possession, or any other means) to the victim without his or her consent, or by threat or deception, and for other than medical purposes, any controlled substance.

(b) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual abuse if he or she commits an act of sexual conduct with a victim who was under 18 years of age when the act was committed and the accused was a family member.

(c) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual abuse if:

(1) the accused was 17 years of age or over and (i) commits an act of sexual conduct with a victim who was under 13 years of age when the act was committed; or (ii) commits an act of sexual conduct with a victim who was at least 13 years of age but under 17 years of age when the act was committed and the accused used force or threat of force to commit the act; or

(2) the accused was under 17 years of age and (i) commits an act of sexual conduct with a victim who was under 9 years of age when the act was committed; or (ii) commits an act of sexual conduct with a victim who was at least 9 years of age but under 17 years of age when the act was committed and the accused used force or threat of force to commit the act.

(d) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual abuse if he or she commits an act of sexual penetration or sexual conduct with a victim who was at least 13 years of age but under 17 years of age and the accused was at least 5 years older than the victim.

(e) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual abuse if he or she commits an act of sexual conduct with a victim who was a severely or profoundly mentally retarded person at the time the act was committed.

(f) The accused commits aggravated criminal sexual abuse if he or she commits an act of sexual conduct with a victim who was at least 13 years of age but under 18 years of age when the act was committed and the accused was 17 years of age or over and held a position of trust, authority or supervision in relation to the victim.

(g) Sentence. Aggravated criminal sexual abuse is a Class 2 felony.

## **720 ILL. COMP. STAT. ANN. 5/12-17 (West 2009). DEFENSES**

### **§ 12-17. Defenses.**

(a) It shall be a defense to any offense under Section 12-13 through 12-16 of this Code where force or threat of force is an element of the offense that the victim consented. "Consent" means a freely given agreement to the act of sexual penetration or sexual conduct in question. Lack of verbal or physical resistance or submission by the victim resulting from

the use of force or threat of force by the accused shall not constitute consent. The manner of dress of the victim at the time of the offense shall not constitute consent.

(b) It shall be a defense under subsection (b) and subsection (c) of Section 12-15 and subsection (d) of Section 12-16 of this Code that the accused reasonably believed the person to be 17 years of age or over.

(c) A person who initially consents to sexual penetration or sexual conduct is not deemed to have consented to any sexual penetration or sexual conduct that occurs after he or she withdraws consent during the course of that sexual penetration or sexual conduct.

## INDIANA

### IND. CODE ANN. § 35-42-4-1 (West 2009). RAPE

Sec. 1. (a) Except as provided in subsection (b), a person who knowingly or intentionally has sexual intercourse with a member of the opposite sex when:

- (1) the other person is compelled by force or imminent threat of force;
- (2) the other person is unaware that the sexual intercourse is occurring; or
- (3) the other person is so mentally disabled or deficient that consent to sexual intercourse cannot be given;

commits rape, a Class B felony.

(b) An offense described in subsection (a) is a Class A felony if:

- (1) it is committed by using or threatening the use of deadly force;
- (2) it is committed while armed with a deadly weapon;
- (3) it results in serious bodily injury to a person other than a defendant; or
- (4) the commission of the offense is facilitated by furnishing the victim, without the victim's knowledge, with a drug (as defined in IC 16-42-19-2(1)) or a controlled substance (as defined in IC 35-48-1-9) or knowing that the victim was furnished with the drug or controlled substance without the victim's knowledge.

### IND. CODE ANN. § 35-42-4-8 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY

Sec. 8. (a) A person who, with intent to arouse or satisfy the person's own sexual desires or the sexual desires of another person, touches another person when that person is:

(1) compelled to submit to the touching by force or the imminent threat of force; or

(2) so mentally disabled or deficient that consent to the touching cannot be given;

commits sexual battery, a Class D felony.

(b) An offense described in subsection (a) is a Class C felony if:

(1) it is committed by using or threatening the use of deadly force;

(2) it is committed while armed with a deadly weapon; or

(3) the commission of the offense is facilitated by furnishing the victim, without the victim's knowledge, with a drug (as defined in IC 16-42-19-2(1)) or a controlled substance (as defined in IC 35-48-1-9) or knowing that the victim was furnished with the drug or controlled substance without the victim's knowledge.

## IOWA

### **IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.1 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE DEFINED**

Any sex act between persons is sexual abuse by either of the persons when the act is performed with the other person in any of the following circumstances:

1. The act is done by force or against the will of the other. If the consent or acquiescence of the other is procured by threats of violence toward any person or if the act is done while the other is under the influence of a drug inducing sleep or is otherwise in a state of unconsciousness, the act is done against the will of the other.

2. Such other person is suffering from a mental defect or incapacity which precludes giving consent, or lacks the mental capacity to know the right and wrong of conduct in sexual matters.

3. Such other person is a child.

### **IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.2 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

A person commits sexual abuse in the first degree when in the course of committing sexual abuse the person causes another serious injury.

Sexual abuse in the first degree is a class “A” felony.

### **IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.3 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

A person commits sexual abuse in the second degree when the person commits sexual abuse under any of the following circumstances:

1. During the commission of sexual abuse the person displays in a threatening manner a dangerous weapon, or uses or threatens to use force creating a substantial risk of death or serious injury to any person.
2. The other person is under the age of twelve.
3. The person is aided or abetted by one or more persons and the sex act is committed by force or against the will of the other person against whom the sex act is committed.

Sexual abuse in the second degree is a class “B” felony.

### **IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.4 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

A person commits sexual abuse in the third degree when the person performs a sex act under any of the following circumstances:

1. The act is done by force or against the will of the other person, whether or not the other person is the person's spouse or is cohabiting with the person.
2. The act is between persons who are not at the time cohabiting as husband and wife and if any of the following are true:
  - a. The other person is suffering from a mental defect or incapacity which precludes giving consent.
  - b. The other person is twelve or thirteen years of age.
  - c. The other person is fourteen or fifteen years of age and any of the following are true:
    - (1) The person is a member of the same household as the other person.
    - (2) The person is related to the other person by blood or affinity to the fourth degree.
    - (3) The person is in a position of authority over the other person and uses that authority to coerce the other person to submit.



(4) The person is four or more years older than the other person.

3. The act is performed while the other person is under the influence of a controlled substance, which may include but is not limited to flunitrazepam, and all of the following are true:

a. The controlled substance, which may include but is not limited to flunitrazepam, prevents the other person from consenting to the act.

b. The person performing the act knows or reasonably should have known that the other person was under the influence of the controlled substance, which may include but is not limited to flunitrazepam.

4. The act is performed while the other person is mentally incapacitated, physically incapacitated, or physically helpless.

Sexual abuse in the third degree is a class "C" felony.

## **IOWA CODE ANN. § 709.10 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE--EVIDENCE**

1. When an alleged victim of sexual abuse consents to undergo a sexual abuse examination and to having the evidence preserved, a sexual abuse evidence collection kit must be collected and properly stored with the law enforcement agency under whose jurisdiction the offense occurred or with the agency collecting the evidence to ensure that the chain of custody is complete and sufficient.

2. If an alleged victim of sexual abuse has not filed a complaint and a sexual abuse evidence collection kit has been completed, the kit must be stored by the law enforcement agency for a minimum of ten years. In addition, if the alleged victim does not want their name recorded on the sexual abuse collection kit, a case number or other identifying information shall be assigned to the kit in place of the name of the alleged victim.

## **KANSAS**

### **KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3501 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

The following definitions apply in this article unless a different meaning is plainly required:

(1) "Sexual intercourse" means any penetration of the female sex organ by a finger, the male sex organ or any object. Any penetration, however slight, is sufficient to constitute sexual intercourse. "Sexual intercourse" does not include penetration of the female sex organ by a finger or object in the course of the performance of:

(a) Generally recognized health care practices; or

(b) a body cavity search conducted in accordance with K.S.A. 22-2520 through 22-2524, and amendments thereto.

(2) "Sodomy" means oral contact or oral penetration of the female genitalia or oral contact of the male genitalia; anal penetration, however slight, of a male or female by any body part or object; or oral or anal copulation or sexual intercourse between a person and an animal. "Sodomy" does not include penetration of the anal opening by a finger or object in the course of the performance of:

(a) Generally recognized health care practices; or

(b) a body cavity search conducted in accordance with K.S.A. 22-2520 through 22-2524, and amendments thereto.

(3) "Spouse" means a lawful husband or wife, unless the couple is living apart in separate residences or either spouse has filed an action for annulment, separate maintenance or divorce or for relief under the protection from abuse act.

(4) "Unlawful sexual act" means any rape, indecent liberties with a child, aggravated indecent liberties with a child, criminal sodomy, aggravated criminal sodomy, lewd and lascivious behavior, sexual battery or aggravated sexual battery, as defined in this code.

## **KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3502 (West 2009). RAPE**

(a) Rape is: (1) Sexual intercourse with a person who does not consent to the sexual intercourse, under any of the following circumstances:

(A) When the victim is overcome by force or fear;

(B) when the victim is unconscious or physically powerless; or

(C) when the victim is incapable of giving consent because of mental deficiency or disease, or when the victim is incapable of giving consent because of the effect of any alcoholic liquor, narcotic, drug or other substance, which condition was known by the offender or was reasonably apparent to the offender;

(2) sexual intercourse with a child who is under 14 years of age;

(3) sexual intercourse with a victim when the victim's consent was obtained through a knowing misrepresentation made by the offender that the sexual intercourse was a medically or therapeutically necessary procedure; or

(4) sexual intercourse with a victim when the victim's consent was obtained through a knowing misrepresentation made by the offender that the sexual intercourse was a legally required procedure within the scope of the offender's authority.

(b) It shall be a defense to a prosecution of rape under subsection (a)(2) that the child was married to the accused at the time of the offense.

(c) Except as provided further, rape as described in subsection (a)(1) or (2) is a severity level 1, person felony. Rape as described in subsection (a)(2), when the offender is 18 years of age or older, is an off-grid person felony. Rape as described in subsection (a)(3) or (4) is a severity level 2, person felony.

## **KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3505 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SODOMY**

(a) Criminal sodomy is:

- (1) Sodomy between persons who are 16 or more years of age and members of the same sex or between a person and an animal;
- (2) sodomy with a child who is 14 or more years of age but less than 16 years of age; or
- (3) causing a child 14 or more years of age but less than 16 years of age to engage in sodomy with any person or animal.

(b) It shall be a defense to a prosecution of criminal sodomy as provided in subsection (a)(2) that the child was married to the accused at the time of the offense.

(c) Criminal sodomy as provided in subsection (a)(1) is a class B nonperson misdemeanor. Criminal sodomy as provided in subsections (a)(2) and (a)(3) is a severity level 3, person felony.

## **KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3506 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED CRIMINAL SODOMY**

(a) Aggravated criminal sodomy is:

- (1) Sodomy with a child who is under 14 years of age;
- (2) causing a child under 14 years of age to engage in sodomy with any person or an animal; or
- (3) sodomy with a person who does not consent to the sodomy or causing a person, without the person's consent, to engage in sodomy with any person or an animal, under any of the following circumstances:
  - (A) When the victim is overcome by force or fear;
  - (B) when the victim is unconscious or physically powerless; or
  - (C) when the victim is incapable of giving consent because of mental deficiency or disease, or when the victim is incapable of giving consent because of the effect of any alcoholic liquor, narcotic, drug or other substance, which condition was known by the offender or was reasonably apparent to the offender.

(b) It shall be a defense to a prosecution of aggravated criminal sodomy under subsection (a)(1) that the child was married to the accused at the time of the offense.

(c) Except as provided further, aggravated criminal sodomy is a severity level 1, person felony. Aggravated criminal sodomy as described in subsection (a)(1) or (a)(2), when the offender is 18 years of age or older, is an off-grid person felony.

### **KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3517 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

(a) Sexual battery is the intentional touching of the person of another who is 16 or more years of age, who is not the spouse of the offender and who does not consent thereto, with the intent to arouse or satisfy the sexual desires of the offender or another.

(b) Sexual battery is a class A person misdemeanor.

(c) This section shall be part of and supplemental to the Kansas criminal code.

### **KAN. CRIM. CODE ANN. § 21-3518 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY**

(a) Aggravated sexual battery is the intentional touching of the person of another who is 16 or more years of age and who does not consent thereto, with the intent to arouse or satisfy the sexual desires of the offender or another under any of the following circumstances:

(1) When the victim is overcome by force or fear;

(2) when the victim is unconscious or physically powerless;

(3) when the victim is incapable of giving consent because of mental deficiency or disease, or when the victim is incapable of giving consent because of the effect of any alcoholic liquor, narcotic, drug or other substance, which condition was known by, or was reasonably apparent to, the offender.

(b) Aggravated sexual battery is a severity level 5, person felony.

(c) This section shall be part of and supplemental to the Kansas criminal code.

## **KENTUCKY**

### **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.010 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS FOR CHAPTER**

The following definitions apply in this chapter unless the context otherwise requires:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

(1) “Deviate sexual intercourse” means any act of sexual gratification involving the sex organs of one person and the mouth or anus of another; or penetration of the anus of one person by a foreign object manipulated by another person. “Deviate sexual intercourse” does not include penetration of the anus by a foreign object in the course of the performance of generally recognized health-care practices;

(2) “Forcible compulsion” means physical force or threat of physical force, express or implied, which places a person in fear of immediate death, physical injury to self or another person, fear of the immediate kidnap of self or another person, or fear of any offense under this chapter. Physical resistance on the part of the victim shall not be necessary to meet this definition;

(3) “Mental illness” means a diagnostic term that covers many clinical categories, typically including behavioral or psychological symptoms, or both, along with impairment of personal and social function, and specifically defined and clinically interpreted through reference to criteria contained in the Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders (Third Edition) and any subsequent revision thereto, of the American Psychiatric Association;

(4) “Mentally retarded person” means a person with significantly subaverage general intellectual functioning existing concurrently with deficits in adaptive behavior and manifested during the developmental period, as defined in KRS Chapter 202B;

(5) “Mentally incapacitated” means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling his conduct as a result of the influence of an intoxicating substance administered to him without his consent or as a result of any other act committed upon him without his consent;

(6) “Physically helpless” means that a person is unconscious or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act. “Physically helpless” also includes a person who has been rendered unconscious or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate an unwillingness to an act as a result of the influence of a controlled substance or legend drug;

(7) “Sexual contact” means any touching of the sexual or other intimate parts of a person done for the purpose of gratifying the sexual desire of either party;

(8) “Sexual intercourse” means sexual intercourse in its ordinary sense and includes penetration of the sex organs of one person by a foreign object manipulated by another person. Sexual intercourse occurs upon any penetration, however slight; emission is not required. “Sexual intercourse” does not include penetration of the sex organ by a foreign object in the course of the performance of generally recognized health-care practices; and

(9) “Foreign object” means anything used in commission of a sexual act other than the person of the actor.

## **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.020 (West 2009). LACK OF CONSENT**

(1) Whether or not specifically stated, it is an element of every offense defined in this chapter that the sexual act was committed without consent of the victim.

(2) Lack of consent results from:

(a) Forcible compulsion;

(b) Incapacity to consent; or

(c) If the offense charged is sexual abuse, any circumstances in addition to forcible compulsion or incapacity to consent in which the victim does not expressly or impliedly acquiesce in the actor's conduct.

(3) A person is deemed incapable of consent when he or she is:

(a) Less than sixteen (16) years old;

(b) Mentally retarded or suffers from a mental illness;

(c) Mentally incapacitated;

(d) Physically helpless; or

(e) Under the care or custody of a state or local agency pursuant to court order and the actor is employed by or working on behalf of the state or local agency.

(4) The provisions of subsection (3)(e) of this section shall not apply to persons who are lawfully married to each other and no court order is in effect prohibiting contact between the parties.

## **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.030 (West 2009). DEFENSES**

In any prosecution under this chapter in which the victim's lack of consent is based solely on his incapacity to consent because he was less than sixteen (16) years old, mentally retarded, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless, the defendant may prove in exculpation that at the time he engaged in the conduct constituting the offense he did not know of the facts or conditions responsible for such incapacity to consent.

**KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.035 (West 2009). NO OFFENSE COMMITTED IF PARTIES MARRIED TO EACH OTHER**

A person who engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with another person to whom the person is married, or subjects another person to whom the person is married to sexual contact, does not commit an offense under this chapter regardless of the person's age solely because the other person is less than sixteen (16) years old or mentally retarded.

**KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.040 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of rape in the first degree when:

- (a) He engages in sexual intercourse with another person by forcible compulsion; or
- (b) He engages in sexual intercourse with another person who is incapable of consent because he:
  - 1. Is physically helpless; or
  - 2. Is less than twelve (12) years old.

(2) Rape in the first degree is a Class B felony unless the victim is under twelve (12) years old or receives a serious physical injury in which case it is a Class A felony.

**KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.050 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of rape in the second degree when:

- (a) Being eighteen (18) years old or more, he engages in sexual intercourse with another person less than fourteen (14) years old; or
- (b) He engages in sexual intercourse with another person who is mentally incapacitated.

(2) Rape in the second degree is a Class C felony.

**KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.060 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of rape in the third degree when:

- (a) He engages in sexual intercourse with another person who is incapable of consent because he or she is mentally retarded;

(b) Being twenty-one (21) years old or more, he or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person less than sixteen (16) years old;

(c) Being twenty-one (21) years old or more, he or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person less than eighteen (18) years old and for whom he or she provides a foster family home as defined in KRS 600.020; or

(d) Being a person in a position of authority or position of special trust, as defined in KRS 532.045, he or she engages in sexual intercourse with a minor under sixteen (16) years old with whom he or she comes into contact as a result of that position.

(2) Rape in the third degree is a Class D felony.

### **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.070 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of sodomy in the first degree when:

(a) He engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person by forcible compulsion; or

(b) He engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person who is incapable of consent because he:

1. Is physically helpless; or

2. Is less than twelve (12) years old.

(2) Sodomy in the first degree is a Class B felony unless the victim is under twelve (12) years old or receives a serious physical injury in which case it is a Class A felony.

### **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.080 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of sodomy in the second degree when:

(a) Being eighteen (18) years old or more, he engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person less than fourteen (14) years old; or

(b) He engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person who is mentally incapacitated.

(2) Sodomy in the second degree is a Class C felony.



## **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.090 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of sodomy in the third degree when:

- (a) He engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person who is incapable of consent because he or she is mentally retarded;
- (b) Being twenty-one (21) years old or more, he or she engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person less than sixteen (16) years old; or
- (c) Being twenty-one (21) years old or more, he or she engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person less than eighteen (18) years old and for whom he or she provides a foster family home as defined in KRS 600.020; or
- (d) Being a person in a position of authority or position of special trust, as defined in KRS 532.045, he or she engages in deviate sexual intercourse with a minor less than sixteen (16) years old with whom he or she comes into contact as a result of that position.

(2) Sodomy in the third degree is a Class D felony.

## **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.100 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE FOURTH DEGREE**

Held Unconstitutional by: *Com. v. Wasson*, 842 S.W.2d 487, 488+, 61 USLW 2180, 2180+ (Ky. Sep 24, 1992) (NO. 90-SC-558-TG)

## **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.110 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the first degree when:

- (a) He or she subjects another person to sexual contact by forcible compulsion; or
- (b) He or she subjects another person to sexual contact who is incapable of consent because he or she:
  - 1. Is physically helpless;
  - 2. Is less than twelve (12) years old; or

3. Is mentally incapacitated; or

(c) Being twenty-one (21) years old or more, he or she:

1. Subjects another person who is less than sixteen (16) years old to sexual contact;
2. Engages in masturbation in the presence of another person who is less than sixteen (16) years old and knows or has reason to know the other person is present; or
3. Engages in masturbation while using the Internet, telephone, or other electronic communication device while communicating with a minor who the person knows is less than sixteen (16) years old, and the minor can see or hear the person masturbate; or

(d) Being a person in a position of authority or position of special trust, as defined in KRS 532.045, he or she, regardless of his or her age, subjects a minor who is less than eighteen (18) years old, with whom he or she comes into contact as a result of that position, to sexual contact or engages in masturbation in the presence of the minor and knows or has reason to know the minor is present or engages in masturbation while using the Internet, telephone, or other electronic communication device while communicating with a minor who the person knows is less than sixteen (16) years old, and the minor can see or hear the person masturbate.

(2) Sexual abuse in the first degree is a Class D felony, unless the victim is less than twelve (12) years old, in which case the offense shall be a Class C felony.

## **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.120 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the second degree when:

(a) He or she subjects another person to sexual contact who is incapable of consent because he or she is mentally retarded;

(b) He or she is at least eighteen (18) years old but less than twenty-one (21) years old and subjects another person who is less than sixteen (16) years old to sexual contact; or

(c) Being an employee, contractor, vendor, or volunteer of the Department of Corrections, or a detention facility as defined in KRS 520.010, or of an entity under contract with either the department or a detention facility for the custody, supervision, evaluation, or treatment of offenders, he or she subjects an offender who is incarcerated, supervised, evaluated, or treated by the Department of Corrections, the detention facility, or the contracting entity, to sexual contact. In any prosecution under this paragraph, the defendant may prove in exculpation that, at the time he or she engaged in the conduct constituting the offense, he or she and the offender were married to each other.

(2) In any prosecution under subsection (1)(b) of this section, it is a defense that:

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(a) The other person's lack of consent was due solely to incapacity to consent by reason of being less than sixteen (16) years old; and

(b) The other person was at least fourteen (14) years old; and

(c) The actor was less than five (5) years older than the other person.

(3) Sexual abuse in the second degree is a Class A misdemeanor.

### **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.130 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the third degree when he or she subjects another person to sexual contact without the latter's consent.

(2) In any prosecution under this section, it is a defense that:

(a) The other person's lack of consent was due solely to incapacity to consent by reason of being less than sixteen (16) years old; and

(b) The other person was at least fourteen (14) years old; and

(c) The actor was less than eighteen (18) years old.

(3) Sexual abuse in the third degree is a Class B misdemeanor.

### **KY. REV. STAT. ANN. § 510.140 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT**

(1) A person is guilty of sexual misconduct when he engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with another person without the latter's consent.

(2) Sexual misconduct is a Class A misdemeanor.

## **LOUISIANA**

### **LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:41 (2009). RAPE; DEFINED**

A. Rape is the act of anal, oral, or vaginal sexual intercourse with a male or female person committed without the person's lawful consent.

B. Emission is not necessary, and any sexual penetration, when the rape involves vaginal or anal intercourse, however slight, is sufficient to complete the crime.

C. For purposes of this Subpart, "oral sexual intercourse" means the intentional engaging in any of the following acts with another person:

(1) The touching of the anus or genitals of the victim by the offender using the mouth or tongue of the offender.

(2) The touching of the anus or genitals of the offender by the victim using the mouth or tongue of the victim.

### **LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:42 (2009). AGGRAVATED RAPE**

Held Unconstitutional by: Kennedy v. Louisiana, 128 S.Ct. 2641, 2641+, 171 L.Ed.2d 525, 525+, 76 USLW 4584, 4584+, 08 Cal. Daily Op. Serv. 7920, 7920+, 2008 Daily Journal D.A.R. 9470, 9470+, 21 Fla. L. Weekly Fed. S 472, 472+ (U.S. Jun 25, 2008) (NO. 07-343)

### **LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:42.1 (2009). FORCIBLE RAPE**

A. Forcible rape is rape committed when the anal, oral, or vaginal sexual intercourse is deemed to be without the lawful consent of the victim because it is committed under any one or more of the following circumstances:

(1) When the victim is prevented from resisting the act by force or threats of physical violence under circumstances where the victim reasonably believes that such resistance would not prevent the rape.

(2) When the victim is incapable of resisting or of understanding the nature of the act by reason of stupor or abnormal condition of the mind produced by a narcotic or anesthetic agent or other controlled dangerous substance administered by the offender and without the knowledge of the victim.

B. Whoever commits the crime of forcible rape shall be imprisoned at hard labor for not less than five nor more than forty years. At least two years of the sentence imposed shall be without benefit of probation, parole, or suspension of sentence.

### **LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43 (2009). SIMPLE RAPE**

A. Simple rape is a rape committed when the anal, oral, or vaginal sexual intercourse is deemed to be without the lawful consent of a victim because it is committed under any one or more of the following circumstances:

(1) When the victim is incapable of resisting or of understanding the nature of the act by reason of a stupor or abnormal condition of mind produced by an intoxicating agent or any cause and the offender knew or should have known of the victim's incapacity.

(2) When the victim is incapable, through unsoundness of mind, whether temporary or permanent, or understanding the nature of the act and the offender knew or should have known of the victim's incapacity.

(3) When the female victim submits under the belief that the person committing the act is her husband and such belief is intentionally induced by any artifice, pretense, or concealment practiced by the offender.

B. Whoever commits the crime of simple rape shall be imprisoned, with or without hard labor, without benefit of parole, probation, or suspension of sentence, for not more than twenty-five years.

## **LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43.1 (2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

A. Sexual battery is the intentional engaging in any of the following acts with another person where the offender acts without the consent of the victim, or where the act is consensual but the other person, who is not the spouse of the offender, has not yet attained fifteen years of age and is at least three years younger than the offender:

(1) The touching of the anus or genitals of the victim by the offender using any instrumentality or any part of the body of the offender; or

(2) The touching of the anus or genitals of the offender by the victim using any instrumentality or any part of the body of the victim.

B. Lack of knowledge of the victim's age shall not be a defense. However, where the victim is under seventeen, normal medical treatment or normal sanitary care of an infant shall not be construed as an offense under the provisions of this Section.

C. (1) Whoever commits the crime of sexual battery shall be punished by imprisonment, with or without hard labor, without benefit of parole, probation, or suspension of sentence, for not more than ten years.

(2) Whoever commits the crime of sexual battery on a victim under the age of thirteen years when the offender is seventeen years of age or older shall be punished by imprisonment at hard labor for not less than twenty-five years nor more than ninety-nine years. At least twenty-five years of the sentence imposed shall be served without benefit of parole, probation, or suspension of sentence.

(3) Upon completion of the term of imprisonment imposed in accordance with Paragraph (2) of this Subsection, the offender shall be monitored by the Department of Public Safety and Corrections through the use of electronic monitoring equipment for the remainder of his natural life.

(4) Unless it is determined by the Department of Public Safety and Corrections, pursuant to rules adopted in accordance with the provisions of this Subsection, that a sexual offender is unable to pay all or any portion of such costs, each sexual offender to be electronically monitored shall pay the cost of such monitoring.

(5) The costs attributable to the electronic monitoring of an offender who has been determined unable to pay shall be borne by the department if, and only to the degree that sufficient funds are made available for such purpose whether by appropriation of state funds or from any other source.

(6) The Department of Public Safety and Corrections shall develop, adopt, and promulgate rules in the manner provided in the Administrative Procedure Act,<sup>[FN1]</sup> that provide for the payment of such costs. Such rules shall contain specific guidelines which shall be used to determine the ability of the offender to pay the required costs and shall establish the reasonable costs to be charged. Such rules may provide for a sliding scale of payment so that an offender who is able to pay a portion, but not all, of such costs may be required to pay such portion.

## **LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43.2 (2009). SECOND DEGREE SEXUAL BATTERY**

A. Second degree sexual battery is the intentional engaging in any of the following acts with another person when the offender intentionally inflicts serious bodily injury on the victim:

(1) The touching of the anus or genitals of the victim by the offender using any instrumentality or any part of the body of the offender; or

(2) The touching of the anus or genitals of the offender by the victim using any instrumentality or any part of the body of the victim.

B. For the purposes of this Section, serious bodily injury means bodily injury which involves unconsciousness, extreme physical pain or protracted and obvious disfigurement, or protracted loss or impairment of the function of a bodily member, organ, or mental faculty, or a substantial risk of death.

C. (1) Whoever commits the crime of second degree sexual battery shall be punished by imprisonment, with or without hard labor, without benefit of parole, probation, or suspension of sentence, for not more than fifteen years.

(2) Whoever commits the crime of second degree sexual battery on a victim under the age of thirteen years when the offender is seventeen years of age or older shall be punished by

imprisonment at hard labor for not less than twenty-five years nor more than ninety-nine years. At least twenty-five years of the sentence imposed shall be served without benefit of parole, probation, or suspension of sentence.

(3) Upon completion of the term of imprisonment imposed in accordance with Paragraph (2) of this Subsection, the offender shall be monitored by the Department of Public Safety and Corrections through the use of electronic monitoring equipment for the remainder of his natural life.

(4) Unless it is determined by the Department of Public Safety and Corrections, pursuant to rules adopted in accordance with the provisions of this Subsection, that a sexual offender is unable to pay all or any portion of such costs, each sexual offender to be electronically monitored shall pay the cost of such monitoring.

(5) The costs attributable to the electronic monitoring of an offender who has been determined unable to pay shall be borne by the department if, and only to the degree that sufficient funds are made available for such purpose whether by appropriation of state funds or from any other source.

(6) The Department of Public Safety and Corrections shall develop, adopt, and promulgate rules in the manner provided in the Administrative Procedure Act, [FN1] that provide for the payment of such costs. Such rules shall contain specific guidelines which shall be used to determine the ability of the offender to pay the required costs and shall establish the reasonable costs to be charged. Such rules may provide for a sliding scale of payment so that an offender who is able to pay a portion, but not all, of such costs may be required to pay such portion.

## **LA. REV. STAT. ANN. § 14:43.3 (2009). ORAL SEXUAL BATTERY**

A. Oral sexual battery is the intentional engaging in any of the following acts with another person, who is not the spouse of the offender when the other person has not yet attained fifteen years of age and is at least three years younger than the offender:

(1) The touching of the anus or genitals of the victim by the offender using the mouth or tongue of the offender; or

(2) The touching of the anus or genitals of the offender by the victim using the mouth or tongue of the victim.

B. Lack of knowledge of the victim's age shall not be a defense.

C. (1) Whoever commits the crime of oral sexual battery shall be punished by imprisonment, with or without hard labor, without benefit of parole, probation, or suspension of sentence, for not more than ten years.

(2) Whoever commits the crime of oral sexual battery on a victim under the age of thirteen years when the offender is seventeen years of age or older shall be punished by imprisonment at hard labor for not less than twenty-five years nor more than ninety-nine years. At least twenty-five years of the sentence imposed shall be served without benefit of parole, probation, or suspension of sentence.

(3) Upon completion of the term of imprisonment imposed in accordance with Paragraph (2) of this Subsection, the offender shall be monitored by the Department of Public Safety and Corrections through the use of electronic monitoring equipment for the remainder of his natural life.

(4) Unless it is determined by the Department of Public Safety and Corrections, pursuant to rules adopted in accordance with the provisions of this Subsection, that a sexual offender is unable to pay all or any portion of such costs, each sexual offender to be electronically monitored shall pay the cost of such monitoring.

(5) The costs attributable to the electronic monitoring of an offender who has been determined unable to pay shall be borne by the department if, and only to the degree that sufficient funds are made available for such purpose whether by appropriation of state funds or from any other source.

(6) The Department of Public Safety and Corrections shall develop, adopt, and promulgate rules in the manner provided in the Administrative Procedure Act, [FN1] that provide for the payment of such costs. Such rules shall contain specific guidelines which shall be used to determine the ability of the offender to pay the required costs and shall establish the reasonable costs to be charged. Such rules may provide for a sliding scale of payment so that an offender who is able to pay a portion, but not all, of such costs may be required to pay such portion.

## MAINE

### **ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 251 (2009). DEFINITIONS AND GENERAL PROVISIONS**

1. In this chapter the following definitions apply.

A. “Spouse” means a person legally married to the actor, but does not include a legally married person living apart from the actor under a defacto separation.

B. Repealed. Laws 1989, c. 401, § A, 2.

C. “Sexual act” means:



**(1)** Any act between 2 persons involving direct physical contact between the genitals of one and the mouth or anus of the other, or direct physical contact between the genitals of one and the genitals of the other;

**(2)** Any act between a person and an animal being used by another person which act involves direct physical contact between the genitals of one and the mouth or anus of the other, or direct physical contact between the genitals of one and the genitals of the other; or

**(3)** Any act involving direct physical contact between the genitals or anus of one and an instrument or device manipulated by another person when that act is done for the purpose of arousing or gratifying sexual desire or for the purpose of causing bodily injury or offensive physical contact.

A sexual act may be proved without allegation or proof of penetration.

**D.** “Sexual contact” means any touching of the genitals or anus, directly or through clothing, other than as would constitute a sexual act, for the purpose of arousing or gratifying sexual desire or for the purpose of causing bodily injury or offensive physical contact.

**E.** “Compulsion” means the use of physical force, a threat to use physical force or a combination thereof that makes a person unable to physically repel the actor or produces in that person a reasonable fear that death, serious bodily injury or kidnapping might be imminently inflicted upon that person or another human being.

“Compulsion” as defined in this paragraph places no duty upon the victim to resist the actor.

**F.** “Safe children zone” means on or within 1,000 feet of the real property comprising a public or private elementary or secondary school or on or within 1,000 feet of the real property comprising a day care center licensed pursuant to Title 22, section 8301-A.

**G.** “Sexual touching” means any touching of the breasts, buttocks, groin or inner thigh, directly or through clothing, for the purpose of arousing or gratifying sexual desire.

## **ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 253 (2009). GROSS SEXUAL ASSAULT**

**1.** A person is guilty of gross sexual assault if that person engages in a sexual act with another person and:

**A.** The other person submits as a result of compulsion, as defined in section 251, subsection 1, paragraph E. Violation of this paragraph is a Class A crime;

**B.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, has not in fact attained the age of 14 years. Violation of this paragraph is a Class A crime; or

**C.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, has not in fact attained 12 years of age. Violation of this paragraph is a Class A crime.

**2.** A person is guilty of gross sexual assault if that person engages in a sexual act with another person and:

**A.** The actor has substantially impaired the other person's power to appraise or control the other person's sexual acts by furnishing, as defined in section 1101, subsection 18, paragraph A, administering or employing drugs, intoxicants or other similar means. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**B.** The actor compels or induces the other person to engage in the sexual act by any threat. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**C.** The other person suffers from mental disability that is reasonably apparent or known to the actor, and which in fact renders the other person substantially incapable of appraising the nature of the contact involved or of understanding that the person has the right to deny or withdraw consent. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**D.** The other person is unconscious or otherwise physically incapable of resisting and has not consented to the sexual act. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**E.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is under official supervision as a probationer, a parolee, a sex offender on supervised release, a prisoner on supervised community confinement status or a juvenile on community reintegration status or is detained in a hospital, prison or other institution, and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the other person. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**F.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, has not in fact attained the age of 18 years and is a student enrolled in a private or public elementary, secondary or special education school, facility or institution and the actor is a teacher, employee or other official having instructional, supervisory or disciplinary authority over the student. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**G.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, has not attained the age of 18 years and is a resident in or attending a children's home, day care facility, residential child care facility, drug treatment center, youth camp licensed under Title 22, section 2495 or similar school, facility or institution regularly providing care or services for children, and the actor is a teacher, employee or other person having instructional, supervisory or disciplinary authority over the other person. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**H.** The other person has not in fact attained the age of 18 years and the actor is a parent, stepparent, foster parent, guardian or other similar person responsible for the long-term care and welfare of that other person. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**I.** The actor is a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker or purports to be a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker to the other person and the other person, not the actor's spouse, is a patient or client for mental health therapy of the actor. As used in this paragraph, "mental health therapy" means psychotherapy or other treatment modalities intended to change behavior, emotions or attitudes, which therapy is based upon

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

an intimate relationship involving trust and dependency with a substantial potential for vulnerability and abuse. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime; or

**J.** The actor owns, operates or is an employee of an organization, program or residence that is operated, administered, licensed or funded by the Department of Health and Human Services and the other person, not the actor's spouse, receives services from the organization, program or residence and the organization, program or residence recognizes the other person as a person with mental retardation. It is an affirmative defense to prosecution under this paragraph that the actor receives services for mental retardation or is a person with mental retardation as defined in Title 34-B, section 5001, subsection 3. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime.

**3.** It is a defense to a prosecution under subsection 2, paragraph A that the other person voluntarily consumed or allowed administration of the substance with knowledge of its nature, except that it is no defense when:

**A.** The other person is a patient of the actor and has a reasonable belief that the actor is administering the substance for medical or dental examination or treatment; or

**B.** The other person is in fact 14 or 15 years of age.

**4. Repealed.** Laws 2001, c. 383, § 18, eff. Jan. 31, 2003.

**5. Repealed.** Laws 2001, c. 383, § 19, eff. Jan. 31, 2003.

**6.** In using a sentencing alternative involving a term of imprisonment for a person convicted of violating this section, a court shall, in determining the maximum period of incarceration as the 2nd step in the sentencing process, treat each prior Maine conviction for a violation of this section as an aggravating sentencing factor.

**A.** When the sentencing class for a prior conviction under this section is Class A, the court shall enhance the basic period of incarceration by a minimum of 4 years of imprisonment.

**B.** When the sentencing class for a prior conviction under this section is Class B, the court shall enhance the basic period of incarceration by a minimum of 2 years of imprisonment.

**C.** When the sentencing class for a prior conviction under this section is Class C, the court shall enhance the basic period of incarceration by a minimum of one year of imprisonment.

In arriving at the final sentence as the 3rd step in the sentencing process, the court may not suspend that portion of the maximum term of incarceration based on a prior conviction.

**7.** If the State pleads and proves that a violation of subsection 1 or subsection 2 was committed in a safe children zone, the court, in determining the appropriate sentence, shall treat this as an aggravating sentencing factor.

## **ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 255-A (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT**

**1.** A person is guilty of unlawful sexual contact if the actor intentionally subjects another person to any sexual contact and:

**A.** The other person has not expressly or impliedly acquiesced in the sexual contact. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

**B.** The other person has not expressly or impliedly acquiesced in the sexual contact and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**C.** The other person is unconscious or otherwise physically incapable of resisting and has not consented to the sexual contact. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

**D.** The other person is unconscious or otherwise physically incapable of resisting and has not consented to the sexual contact and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**E.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 14 years of age and the actor is at least 3 years older. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**E-1.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 12 years of age and the actor is at least 3 years older. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**F.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 14 years of age and the actor is at least 3 years older and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**F-1.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 12 years of age and the actor is at least 3 years older and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class A crime;

**G.** The other person suffers from a mental disability that is reasonably apparent or known to the actor that in fact renders the other person substantially incapable of appraising the nature of the contact involved or of understanding that the other person has the right to deny or withdraw consent. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

**H.** The other person suffers from a mental disability that is reasonably apparent or known to the actor that in fact renders the other person substantially incapable of appraising the nature of the contact involved or of understanding that the other person has the right to deny or withdraw consent and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**I.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is under official supervision as a probationer, a parolee, a sex offender on supervised release, a prisoner on supervised community confinement status or a juvenile on community reintegration status or is detained in a

hospital, prison or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the other person. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

**J.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is under official supervision as a probationer, a parolee, a sex offender on supervised release, a prisoner on supervised community confinement status or a juvenile on community reintegration status or is detained in a hospital, prison or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the other person and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**K.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 18 years of age and is a student enrolled in a private or public elementary, secondary or special education school, facility or institution and the actor is a teacher, employee or other official having instructional, supervisory or disciplinary authority over the student. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

**L.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 18 years of age and is a student enrolled in a private or public elementary, secondary or special education school, facility or institution and the actor is a teacher, employee or other official having instructional, supervisory or disciplinary authority over the student and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**M.** The other person is in fact less than 18 years of age and the actor is a parent, stepparent, foster parent, guardian or other similar person responsible for the long-term general care and welfare of that other person. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**N.** The other person is in fact less than 18 years of age and the actor is a parent, stepparent, foster parent, guardian or other similar person responsible for the long-term general care and welfare of that other person and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**O.** The other person submits as a result of compulsion. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**P.** The other person submits as a result of compulsion and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class B crime;

**Q.** The actor owns, operates or is an employee of an organization, program or residence that is operated, administered, licensed or funded by the Department of Health and Human Services and the other person, not the actor's spouse, receives services from the organization, program or residence and the organization, program or residence recognizes that other person as a person with mental retardation. It is an affirmative defense to prosecution under this paragraph that the actor receives services for mental retardation or is a person with mental retardation as defined in Title 34-B, section 5001, subsection 3. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

**R.** The actor owns, operates or is an employee of an organization, program or residence that is operated, administered, licensed or funded by the Department of Health and Human

---

**RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

Services and the other person, not the actor's spouse, receives services from the organization, program or residence and the organization, program or residence recognizes that other person as a person with mental retardation and the sexual contact includes penetration. It is an affirmative defense to prosecution under this paragraph that the actor receives services for mental retardation or is a person with mental retardation as defined in Title 34-B, section 5001, subsection 3. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime;

**S.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 18 years of age and is a student enrolled in a private or public elementary, secondary or special education school, facility or institution and the actor, who is at least 21 years of age, is a teacher, employee or other official in the school district, school union, educational unit, school, facility or institution in which the student is enrolled. Violation of this paragraph is a Class E crime;

**T.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 18 years of age and is a student enrolled in a private or public elementary, secondary or special education school, facility or institution and the actor, who is at least 21 years of age, is a teacher, employee or other official in the school district, school union, educational unit, school, facility or institution in which the student is enrolled and the sexual contact includes penetration. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

**U.** The actor is a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker or purports to be a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker to the other person and the other person, not the actor's spouse, is a patient or client of the actor for mental health therapy. As used in this paragraph, "mental health therapy" means psychotherapy or other treatment modalities intended to change behavior, emotions or attitudes and based upon an intimate relationship involving trust and dependency with a substantial potential for vulnerability and abuse. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime; or

**V.** The actor is a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker or purports to be a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker to the other person and the other person, not the actor's spouse, is a patient or client of the actor for mental health therapy and the sexual contact includes penetration. As used in this paragraph, "mental health therapy" means psychotherapy or other treatment modalities intended to change behavior, emotions or attitudes and based upon an intimate relationship involving trust and dependency with a substantial potential for vulnerability and abuse. Violation of this paragraph is a Class C crime.

## **ME. REV. STAT. ANN. tit. 17, § 260 (2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL TOUCHING**

**1. Unlawful sexual touching.** A person is guilty of unlawful sexual touching if the actor intentionally subjects another person to any sexual touching and:

**A.** The other person has not expressly or impliedly acquiesced in the sexual touching. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;

- B.** The other person is unconscious or otherwise physically incapable of resisting and has not consented to the sexual touching. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- C.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 14 years of age and the actor is at least 5 years older. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- D.** The other person suffers from a mental disability that is reasonably apparent or known to the actor that in fact renders the other person substantially incapable of appraising the nature of the touching involved or of understanding that the other person has the right to deny or withdraw consent. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- E.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is under official supervision as a probationer, a parolee, a sex offender on supervised release, a prisoner on supervised community confinement status or a juvenile on community reintegration status or is detained in a hospital, prison or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the other person. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- F.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 18 years of age and is a student enrolled in a private or public elementary, secondary or special education school, facility or institution and the actor is a teacher, employee or other official having instructional, supervisory or disciplinary authority over the student. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- G.** The other person is in fact less than 18 years of age and the actor is a parent, stepparent, foster parent, guardian or other similar person responsible for the long-term general care and welfare of that other person. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- H.** The other person submits as a result of compulsion. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- I.** The actor owns, operates or is an employee of an organization, program or residence that is operated, administered, licensed or funded by the Department of Health and Human Services and the other person, not the actor's spouse, receives services from the organization, program or residence and the organization, program or residence recognizes that other person as a person with mental retardation. It is an affirmative defense to prosecution under this paragraph that the actor receives services for mental retardation or is a person with mental retardation as defined in Title 34-B, section 5001, subsection 3. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime;
- J.** The other person, not the actor's spouse, is in fact less than 18 years of age and is a student enrolled in a private or public elementary, secondary or special education school, facility or institution and the actor, who is at least 21 years of age, is a teacher, employee or other official in the school district, school union, educational unit, school, facility or institution in which the student is enrolled. Violation of this paragraph is a Class E crime; or
- K.** The actor is a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker or purports to be a psychiatrist, a psychologist or licensed as a social worker to the other person and the other person, not the actor's spouse, is a patient or client of the actor for mental health

therapy. As used in this paragraph, “mental health therapy” means psychotherapy or other treatment modalities intended to change behavior, emotions or attitudes and based upon an intimate relationship involving trust and dependency with a substantial potential for vulnerability and abuse. Violation of this paragraph is a Class D crime.

## MARYLAND

### MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-301 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS

#### In general

(a) In this subtitle the following words have the meanings indicated.

#### Mentally defective individual

(b) “Mentally defective individual” means an individual who suffers from mental retardation or a mental disorder, either of which temporarily or permanently renders the individual substantially incapable of:

- (1) appraising the nature of the individual's conduct;
- (2) resisting vaginal intercourse, a sexual act, or sexual contact; or
- (3) communicating unwillingness to submit to vaginal intercourse, a sexual act, or sexual contact.

#### Mentally incapacitated individual

(c) “Mentally incapacitated individual” means an individual who, because of the influence of a drug, narcotic, or intoxicating substance, or because of an act committed on the individual without the individual's consent or awareness, is rendered substantially incapable of:

- (1) appraising the nature of the individual's conduct; or
- (2) resisting vaginal intercourse, a sexual act, or sexual contact.

#### Physically helpless individual

(d) “Physically helpless individual” means an individual who:

- (1) is unconscious; or
- (2)(i) does not consent to vaginal intercourse, a sexual act, or sexual contact; and



(ii) is physically unable to resist, or communicate unwillingness to submit to, vaginal intercourse, a sexual act, or sexual contact.

#### Sexual act

(e)(1) "Sexual act" means any of the following acts, regardless of whether semen is emitted:

(i) analingus;

(ii) cunnilingus;

(iii) fellatio;

(iv) anal intercourse, including penetration, however slight, of the anus; or

(v) an act:

1. in which an object penetrates, however slightly, into another individual's genital opening or anus; and

2. that can reasonably be construed to be for sexual arousal or gratification, or for the abuse of either party.

(2) "Sexual act" does not include:

(i) vaginal intercourse; or

(ii) an act in which an object penetrates an individual's genital opening or anus for an accepted medical purpose.

#### Sexual contact

(f)(1) "Sexual contact", as used in §§ 3-307, 3-308, and 3-314 of this subtitle, means an intentional touching of the victim's or actor's genital, anal, or other intimate area for sexual arousal or gratification, or for the abuse of either party.

(2) "Sexual contact" includes an act:

(i) in which a part of an individual's body, except the penis, mouth, or tongue, penetrates, however slightly, into another individual's genital opening or anus; and

(ii) that can reasonably be construed to be for sexual arousal or gratification, or for the abuse of either party.

(3) "Sexual contact" does not include:

(i) a common expression of familial or friendly affection; or

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(ii) an act for an accepted medical purpose.

#### Vaginal intercourse

(g)(1) “Vaginal intercourse” means genital copulation, whether or not semen is emitted.

(2) “Vaginal intercourse” includes penetration, however slight, of the vagina.

### **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-302 (West 2009). CONSTRUCTION OF SUBTITLE**

In this subtitle an undefined word or phrase that describes an element of common-law rape retains its judicially determined meaning, except to the extent it is expressly or impliedly changed in this subtitle.

### **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-303 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

#### Prohibited--In general

(a) A person may not:

(1) engage in vaginal intercourse with another by force, or the threat of force, without the consent of the other; and

(2)(i) employ or display a dangerous weapon, or a physical object that the victim reasonably believes is a dangerous weapon;

(ii) suffocate, strangle, disfigure, or inflict serious physical injury on the victim or another in the course of committing the crime;

(iii) threaten, or place the victim in fear, that the victim, or an individual known to the victim, imminently will be subject to death, suffocation, strangulation, disfigurement, serious physical injury, or kidnapping;

(iv) commit the crime while aided and abetted by another; or

(v) commit the crime in connection with a burglary in the first, second, or third degree.

#### Prohibited--Child kidnapping

(b) A person may not violate subsection (a) of this section while also violating § 3-503(a)(2) of this title involving a victim who is a child under the age of 16 years.

### Prohibited--Children under age 13

(c) A person 18 years of age or older may not violate subsection (a) of this section involving a victim who is a child under the age of 13 years.

### Penalty

(d)(1) Except as provided in paragraphs (2), (3), and (4) of this subsection, a person who violates subsection (a) of this section is guilty of the felony of rape in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life.

(2) A person who violates subsection (b) of this section is guilty of the felony of rape in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life without the possibility of parole.

(3) A person who violates subsection (a) or (b) of this section is guilty of the felony of rape in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life without the possibility of parole if the defendant was previously convicted of violating this section or § 3-305 of this subtitle.

(4)(i) Subject to subparagraph (iv) of this paragraph, a person 18 years of age or older who violates subsection (c) of this section is guilty of the felony of rape in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment for not less than 25 years and not exceeding life without the possibility of parole.

(ii) A court may not suspend any part of the mandatory minimum sentence of 25 years.

(iii) The person is not eligible for parole during the mandatory minimum sentence.

(iv) If the State fails to comply with subsection (e) of this section, the mandatory minimum sentence shall not apply.

### Required notice

(e) If the State intends to seek a sentence of imprisonment for life without the possibility of parole under subsection (d)(2), (3), or (4) of this section, or imprisonment for not less than 25 years under subsection (d)(4) of this section, the State shall notify the person in writing of the State's intention at least 30 days before trial.

## **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-304 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

### Prohibited--In general

(a) A person may not engage in vaginal intercourse with another:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

(1) by force, or the threat of force, without the consent of the other;

(2) if the victim is a mentally defective individual, a mentally incapacitated individual, or a physically helpless individual, and the person performing the act knows or reasonably should know that the victim is a mentally defective individual, a mentally incapacitated individual, or a physically helpless individual; or

(3) if the victim is under the age of 14 years, and the person performing the act is at least 4 years older than the victim.

#### Prohibited--Children under age 13

(b) A person 18 years of age or older may not violate subsection (a)(1) or (2) of this section involving a child under the age of 13 years.

#### Penalty

(c)(1) Except as provided in paragraph (2) of this subsection, a person who violates subsection (a) of this section is guilty of the felony of rape in the second degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding 20 years.

(2)(i) Subject to subparagraph (iv) of this paragraph, a person 18 years of age or older who violates subsection (b) of this section is guilty of the felony of rape in the second degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment for not less than 5 years and not exceeding 20 years.

(ii) A court may not suspend any part of the mandatory minimum sentence of 5 years.

(iii) The person is not eligible for parole during the mandatory minimum sentence.

(iv) If the State fails to comply with subsection (d) of this section, the mandatory minimum shall not apply.

#### Required notice

(d) If the State intends to seek a sentence of imprisonment for not less than 5 years under subsection (c)(2) of this section, the State shall notify the person in writing of the State's intention at least 30 days before trial.

## **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-305 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

#### Prohibited--In general

(a) A person may not:

(1) engage in a sexual act with another by force, or the threat of force, without the consent of the other; and

(2)(i) employ or display a dangerous weapon, or a physical object that the victim reasonably believes is a dangerous weapon;

(ii) suffocate, strangle, disfigure, or inflict serious physical injury on the victim or another in the course of committing the crime;

(iii) threaten, or place the victim in fear, that the victim, or an individual known to the victim, imminently will be subject to death, suffocation, strangulation, disfigurement, serious physical injury, or kidnapping;

(iv) commit the crime while aided and abetted by another; or

(v) commit the crime in connection with a burglary in the first, second, or third degree.

#### Prohibited--Child kidnapping

(b) A person may not violate subsection (a) of this section while also violating § 3-503(a)(2) of this title involving a victim who is a child under the age of 16 years.

#### Prohibited--Children under age 13

(c) A person 18 years of age or older may not violate subsection (a) of this section involving a victim who is a child under the age of 13 years.

#### Penalty

(d)(1) Except as provided in paragraphs (2), (3), and (4) of this subsection, a person who violates subsection (a) of this section is guilty of the felony of sexual offense in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life.

(2) A person who violates subsection (b) of this section is guilty of the felony of sexual offense in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life without the possibility of parole.

(3) A person who violates subsection (a) or (b) of this section is guilty of the felony of sexual offense in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life without the possibility of parole if the defendant was previously convicted of violating this section or § 3-303 of this subtitle.

(4)(i) Subject to subparagraph (iv) of this paragraph, a person 18 years of age or older who violates subsection (c) of this section is guilty of the felony of sexual offense in the first degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment for not less than 25 years and not exceeding life without the possibility of parole.

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

- (ii) A court may not suspend any part of the mandatory minimum sentence of 25 years.
- (iii) The person is not eligible for parole during the mandatory minimum sentence.
- (iv) If the State fails to comply with subsection (e) of this section, the mandatory minimum sentence shall not apply.

#### Required notice

(e) If the State intends to seek a sentence of imprisonment for life without the possibility of parole under subsection (d)(2), (3), or (4) of this section, or imprisonment for not less than 25 years under subsection (d)(4) of this section, the State shall notify the person in writing of the State's intention at least 30 days before trial.

### **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-306 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

#### Prohibited--In general

- (a) A person may not engage in a sexual act with another:
  - (1) by force, or the threat of force, without the consent of the other;
  - (2) if the victim is a mentally defective individual, a mentally incapacitated individual, or a physically helpless individual, and the person performing the sexual act knows or reasonably should know that the victim is a mentally defective individual, a mentally incapacitated individual, or a physically helpless individual; or
  - (3) if the victim is under the age of 14 years, and the person performing the sexual act is at least 4 years older than the victim.

#### Prohibited--Children under age 13

- (b) A person 18 years of age or older may not violate subsection (a)(1) or (2) of this section involving a child under the age of 13 years.

#### Penalty

- (c)(1) Except as provided in paragraph (2) of this subsection, a person who violates this section is guilty of the felony of sexual offense in the second degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding 20 years.
- (2)(i) Subject to subparagraph (iv) of this paragraph, a person 18 years of age or older who violates subsection (b) of this section is guilty of the felony of sexual offense in the second

degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment for not less than 5 years and not exceeding 20 years.

(ii) A court may not suspend any part of the mandatory minimum sentence of 5 years.

(iii) The person is not eligible for parole during the mandatory minimum sentence.

(iv) If the State fails to comply with subsection (d) of this section, the mandatory minimum shall not apply.

#### Required notice

(d) If the State intends to seek a sentence of imprisonment for not less than 5 years under subsection (c)(2) of this section, the State shall notify the person in writing of the State's intention at least 30 days before trial.

### **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-307 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

#### Prohibited

(a) A person may not:

(1)(i) engage in sexual contact with another without the consent of the other; and

(ii) 1. employ or display a dangerous weapon, or a physical object that the victim reasonably believes is a dangerous weapon;

2. suffocate, strangle, disfigure, or inflict serious physical injury on the victim or another in the course of committing the crime;

3. threaten, or place the victim in fear, that the victim, or an individual known to the victim, imminently will be subject to death, suffocation, strangulation, disfigurement, serious physical injury, or kidnapping; or

4. commit the crime while aided and abetted by another;

(2) engage in sexual contact with another if the victim is a mentally defective individual, a mentally incapacitated individual, or a physically helpless individual, and the person performing the act knows or reasonably should know the victim is a mentally defective individual, a mentally incapacitated individual, or a physically helpless individual;

(3) engage in sexual contact with another if the victim is under the age of 14 years, and the person performing the sexual contact is at least 4 years older than the victim;

(4) engage in a sexual act with another if the victim is 14 or 15 years old, and the person performing the sexual act is at least 21 years old; or

(5) engage in vaginal intercourse with another if the victim is 14 or 15 years old, and the person performing the act is at least 21 years old.

#### Penalty

(b) A person who violates this section is guilty of the felony of sexual offense in the third degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding 10 years.

### **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-308 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE FOURTH DEGREE**

#### “Person in a position of authority” defined

(a) In this section, “person in a position of authority”:

(1) means a person who:

(i) is at least 21 years old;

(ii) is employed as a full-time permanent employee by a public or private preschool, elementary school, or secondary school; and

(iii) because of the person's position or occupation, exercises supervision over a minor who attends the school; and

(2) includes a principal, vice principal, teacher, or school counselor at a public or private preschool, elementary school, or secondary school.

#### Prohibited--In general

(b) A person may not engage in:

(1) sexual contact with another without the consent of the other;

(2) except as provided in § 3-307(a)(4) of this subtitle, a sexual act with another if the victim is 14 or 15 years old, and the person performing the sexual act is at least 4 years older than the victim; or

(3) except as provided in § 3-307(a)(5) of this subtitle, vaginal intercourse with another if the victim is 14 or 15 years old, and the person performing the act is at least 4 years older than the victim.

#### Prohibited--Persons in a position of authority

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS



(c)(1) Except as provided in § 3-307(a)(4) of this subtitle or subsection (b)(2) of this section, a person in a position of authority may not engage in a sexual act or sexual contact with a minor who, at the time of the sexual act or sexual contact, is a student enrolled at a school where the person in a position of authority is employed.

(2) Except as provided in § 3-307(a)(5) of this subtitle or subsection (b)(3) of this section, a person in a position of authority may not engage in vaginal intercourse with a minor who, at the time of the vaginal intercourse, is a student enrolled at a school where the person in a position of authority is employed.

#### Penalty

(d)(1) Except as provided in paragraph (2) of this subsection, a person who violates this section is guilty of the misdemeanor of sexual offense in the fourth degree and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding 1 year or a fine not exceeding \$1,000 or both.

(2)(i) On conviction of a violation of this section, a person who has been convicted on a prior occasion not arising from the same incident of a violation of §§ 3-303 through 3-312 or § 3-315 of this subtitle or § 3-602 of this title is subject to imprisonment not exceeding 3 years or a fine not exceeding \$1,000 or both.

(ii) If the State intends to proceed against a person under subparagraph (i) of this paragraph, it shall comply with the procedures set forth in the Maryland Rules for the indictment and trial of a subsequent offender.

### **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-309 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

#### Prohibited

(a) A person may not attempt to commit rape in the first degree.

#### Penalty

(b) A person who violates this section is guilty of a felony and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life.

### **MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-310 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

#### Prohibited

(a) A person may not attempt to commit rape in the second degree.

Penalty

(b) A person who violates this section is guilty of a felony and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding 20 years.

**MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-311 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

Prohibited

(a) A person may not attempt to commit a sexual offense in the first degree.

Penalty

(b) A person who violates this section is guilty of a felony and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding life.

**MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW §3-312 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED SEXUAL OFFENSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

Prohibited

(a) A person may not attempt to commit a sexual offense in the second degree.

Penalty

(b) A person who violates this section is guilty of a felony and on conviction is subject to imprisonment not exceeding 20 years.

**MD. CODE ANN., CRIM. LAW § 3-318 (West 2009). RAPE AND SEXUAL OFFENSE--SPOUSAL DEFENSE**

In general

(a) Except as provided in subsections (b) and (c) of this section, a person may not be prosecuted under § 3-303, § 3-304, § 3-307, or § 3-308 of this subtitle for a crime against a victim who was the person's legal spouse at the time of the alleged rape or sexual offense.

### Separation or use of force

(b) A person may be prosecuted under § 3-303(a), § 3-304(a)(1), or § 3-307(a)(1) of this subtitle for a crime against the person's legal spouse if:

(1) at the time of the alleged crime the person and the person's legal spouse have lived apart, without cohabitation and without interruption:

(i) under a written separation agreement executed by the person and the spouse; or

(ii) for at least 3 months immediately before the alleged rape or sexual offense; or

(2) the person in committing the crime uses force or threat of force and the act is without the consent of the spouse.

### Limited divorce

(c) A person may be prosecuted under § 3-303, § 3-304, § 3-307, or § 3-308 of this subtitle for a crime against the person's legal spouse if at the time of the alleged crime the person and the spouse live apart, without cohabitation and without interruption, under a decree of limited divorce.

## MASSACHUSETTS

### **MASS. GEN. LAWS ANN. ch. 265, § 22 (West 2009). RAPE, GENERALLY; WEAPONS; PUNISHMENT; ELIGIBILITY FOR FURLOUGH, EDUCATION, TRAINING OR EMPLOYMENT PROGRAMS**

(a) Whoever has sexual intercourse or unnatural sexual intercourse with a person, and compels such person to submit by force and against his will, or compels such person to submit by threat of bodily injury and if either such sexual intercourse or unnatural sexual intercourse results in or is committed with acts resulting in serious bodily injury, or is committed by a joint enterprise, or is committed during the commission or attempted commission of an offense defined in section fifteen A, fifteen B, seventeen, nineteen or twenty-six of this chapter, section fourteen, fifteen, sixteen, seventeen or eighteen of chapter two hundred and sixty-six or section ten of chapter two hundred and sixty-nine shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for life or for any term of years.

No person serving a sentence for a second or subsequent such offense shall be eligible for furlough, temporary release, or education, training or employment programs established outside a correctional facility until such person shall have served two-thirds of such

minimum sentence or if such person has two or more sentences to be served otherwise than concurrently, two-thirds of the aggregate of the minimum terms of such several sentences.

(b) Whoever has sexual intercourse or unnatural sexual intercourse with a person and compels such person to submit by force and against his will, or compels such person to submit by threat of bodily injury, shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for not more than twenty years; and whoever commits a second or subsequent such offense shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for life or for any term or years.

Whoever commits any offense described in this section while being armed with a firearm, rifle, shotgun, machine-gun or assault weapon, shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for not less than ten years. Whoever commits a second or subsequent such offense shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for life or for any term of years, but not less than 15 years.

No person serving a sentence for a second or subsequent such offense shall be eligible for furlough, temporary release, or education, training or employment programs established outside a correctional facility until such person shall have served two-thirds of such minimum sentence or if such person has two or more sentences to be served otherwise than concurrently, two-thirds of the aggregate of the minimum terms of such several sentences.

For the purposes of prosecution, the offense described in subsection (b) shall be a lesser included offense to that described in subsection (a).

## **MASS. GEN. LAWS ANN. ch. 265, § 13H (West 2009). INDECENT ASSAULT AND BATTERY ON PERSON FOURTEEN OR OLDER; PENALTIES**

Whoever commits an indecent assault and battery on a person who has attained age fourteen shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for not more than five years, or by imprisonment for not more than two and one-half years in a jail or house of correction.

Whoever commits an indecent assault and battery on an elder or person with a disability, as defined in section 13K, shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for not more than 10 years, or by imprisonment in the house of correction for not more than 2 1/2 years, and whoever commits a second or subsequent such offense shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for not more than 20 years. A prosecution commenced under this paragraph shall not be placed on file nor continued without a finding.

## **MASS. GEN. LAWS ANN. ch. 272, § 3 (West 2009). DRUGGING PERSONS FOR SEXUAL INTERCOURSE**

Whoever applies, administers to or causes to be taken by a person any drug, matter or thing with intent to stupefy or overpower such person so as to thereby enable any person to have sexual intercourse or unnatural sexual intercourse with such person shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for life or for any term of years not less than ten years.

## **MICHIGAN**

### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520A (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

Sec. 520a. As used in this chapter:

- (a) "Actor" means a person accused of criminal sexual conduct.
- (b) "Developmental disability" means an impairment of general intellectual functioning or adaptive behavior which meets all of the following criteria:
  - (i) It originated before the person became 18 years of age.
  - (ii) It has continued since its origination or can be expected to continue indefinitely.
  - (iii) It constitutes a substantial burden to the impaired person's ability to perform in society.
  - (iv) It is attributable to 1 or more of the following:
    - (A) Mental retardation, cerebral palsy, epilepsy, or autism.
    - (B) Any other condition of a person found to be closely related to mental retardation because it produces a similar impairment or requires treatment and services similar to those required for a person who is mentally retarded.
- (c) "Electronic monitoring" means that term as defined in section 85 of the corrections code of 1953, 1953 PA 232, MCL 791.285.
- (d) "Intermediate school district" means a corporate body established under part 7 of the revised school code, 1976 PA 451, MCL 380.601 to 380.705.
- (e) "Intimate parts" includes the primary genital area, groin, inner thigh, buttock, or breast of a human being.

(f) “Mental health professional” means that term as defined in section 100b of the mental health code, 1974 PA 258, MCL 330.1100b.

(g) “Mental illness” means a substantial disorder of thought or mood that significantly impairs judgment, behavior, capacity to recognize reality, or ability to cope with the ordinary demands of life.

(h) “Mentally disabled” means that a person has a mental illness, is mentally retarded, or has a developmental disability.

(i) “Mentally incapable” means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect that renders that person temporarily or permanently incapable of appraising the nature of his or her conduct.

(j) “Mentally incapacitated” means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling his or her conduct due to the influence of a narcotic, anesthetic, or other substance administered to that person without his or her consent, or due to any other act committed upon that person without his or her consent.

(k) “Mentally retarded” means significantly subaverage general intellectual functioning that originates during the developmental period and is associated with impairment in adaptive behavior.

(l) “Nonpublic school” means a private, denominational, or parochial elementary or secondary school.

(m) “Physically helpless” means that a person is unconscious, asleep, or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

(n) “Personal injury” means bodily injury, disfigurement, mental anguish, chronic pain, pregnancy, disease, or loss or impairment of a sexual or reproductive organ.

(o) “Public school” means a public elementary or secondary educational entity or agency that is established under the revised school code, 1976 PA 451, MCL 380.1 to 380.1852.

(p) “School district” means a general powers school district organized under the revised school code, 1976 PA 451, MCL 380.1 to 380.1852.

(q) “Sexual contact” includes the intentional touching of the victim’s or actor’s intimate parts or the intentional touching of the clothing covering the immediate area of the victim’s or actor’s intimate parts, if that intentional touching can reasonably be construed as being for the purpose of sexual arousal or gratification, done for a sexual purpose, or in a sexual manner for:

(i) Revenge.

(ii) To inflict humiliation.

(iii) Out of anger.

(r) "Sexual penetration" means sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anal intercourse, or any other intrusion, however slight, of any part of a person's body or of any object into the genital or anal openings of another person's body, but emission of semen is not required.

(s) "Victim" means the person alleging to have been subjected to criminal sexual conduct.

## **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520B (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN FIRST DEGREE**

Sec. 520b. (1) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the first degree if he or she engages in sexual penetration with another person and if any of the following circumstances exists:

(a) That other person is under 13 years of age.

(b) That other person is at least 13 but less than 16 years of age and any of the following:

(i) The actor is a member of the same household as the victim.

(ii) The actor is related to the victim by blood or affinity to the fourth degree.

(iii) The actor is in a position of authority over the victim and used this authority to coerce the victim to submit.

(iv) The actor is a teacher, substitute teacher, or administrator of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district in which that other person is enrolled.

(v) The actor is an employee or a contractual service provider of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district in which that other person is enrolled, or is a volunteer who is not a student in any public school or nonpublic school, or is an employee of this state or of a local unit of government of this state or of the United States assigned to provide any service to that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district, and the actor uses his or her employee, contractual, or volunteer status to gain access to, or to establish a relationship with, that other person.

(c) Sexual penetration occurs under circumstances involving the commission of any other felony.

(d) The actor is aided or abetted by 1 or more other persons and either of the following circumstances exists:

(i) The actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapable, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(ii) The actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the sexual penetration. Force or coercion includes, but is not limited to, any of the circumstances listed in subdivision (f).

(e) The actor is armed with a weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the victim to reasonably believe it to be a weapon.

(f) The actor causes personal injury to the victim and force or coercion is used to accomplish sexual penetration. Force or coercion includes, but is not limited to, any of the following circumstances:

(i) When the actor overcomes the victim through the actual application of physical force or physical violence.

(ii) When the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to use force or violence on the victim, and the victim believes that the actor has the present ability to execute these threats.

(iii) When the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim, or any other person, and the victim believes that the actor has the ability to execute this threat. As used in this subdivision, “to retaliate” includes threats of physical punishment, kidnapping, or extortion.

(iv) When the actor engages in the medical treatment or examination of the victim in a manner or for purposes that are medically recognized as unethical or unacceptable.

(v) When the actor, through concealment or by the element of surprise, is able to overcome the victim.

(g) The actor causes personal injury to the victim, and the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapable, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.

(h) That other person is mentally incapable, mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless, and any of the following:

(i) The actor is related to the victim by blood or affinity to the fourth degree.

(ii) The actor is in a position of authority over the victim and used this authority to coerce the victim to submit.

(2) Criminal sexual conduct in the first degree is a felony punishable as follows:

(a) Except as provided in subdivisions (b) and (c), by imprisonment for life or for any term of years.

(b) For a violation that is committed by an individual 17 years of age or older against an individual less than 13 years of age by imprisonment for life or any term of years, but not less than 25 years.

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS



(c) For a violation that is committed by an individual 17 years of age or older against an individual less than 13 years of age, by imprisonment for life without the possibility of parole if the person was previously convicted of a violation of this section or section 520c, 520d, 520e, or 520g committed against an individual less than 13 years of age or a violation of law of the United States, another state or political subdivision substantially corresponding to a violation of this section or section 520c, 520d, 520e, or 520g [FN1] committed against an individual less than 13 years of age.

(d) In addition to any other penalty imposed under subdivision (a) or (b), the court shall sentence the defendant to lifetime electronic monitoring under section 520n. [FN2]

(3) The court may order a term of imprisonment imposed under this section to be served consecutively to any term of imprisonment imposed for any other criminal offense arising from the same transaction.

## **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520c (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN SECOND DEGREE**

Sec. 520c. (1) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the second degree if the person engages in sexual contact with another person and if any of the following circumstances exists:

(a) That other person is under 13 years of age.

(b) That other person is at least 13 but less than 16 years of age and any of the following:

(i) The actor is a member of the same household as the victim.

(ii) The actor is related by blood or affinity to the fourth degree to the victim.

(iii) The actor is in a position of authority over the victim and the actor used this authority to coerce the victim to submit.

(iv) The actor is a teacher, substitute teacher, or administrator of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district in which that other person is enrolled.

(v) The actor is an employee or a contractual service provider of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district in which that other person is enrolled, or is a volunteer who is not a student in any public school or nonpublic school, or is an employee of this state or of a local unit of government of this state or of the United States assigned to provide any service to that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district, and the actor uses his or her employee, contractual, or volunteer status to gain access to, or to establish a relationship with, that other person.

- (c) Sexual contact occurs under circumstances involving the commission of any other felony.
- (d) The actor is aided or abetted by 1 or more other persons and either of the following circumstances exists:
- (i) The actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapable, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.
  - (ii) The actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the sexual contact. Force or coercion includes, but is not limited to, any of the circumstances listed in section 520b(1)(f). [FN1]
- (e) The actor is armed with a weapon, or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead a person to reasonably believe it to be a weapon.
- (f) The actor causes personal injury to the victim and force or coercion is used to accomplish the sexual contact. Force or coercion includes, but is not limited to, any of the circumstances listed in section 520b(1)(f).
- (g) The actor causes personal injury to the victim and the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapable, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.
- (h) That other person is mentally incapable, mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless, and any of the following:
- (i) The actor is related to the victim by blood or affinity to the fourth degree.
  - (ii) The actor is in a position of authority over the victim and used this authority to coerce the victim to submit.
- (i) That other person is under the jurisdiction of the department of corrections and the actor is an employee or a contractual employee of, or a volunteer with, the department of corrections who knows that the other person is under the jurisdiction of the department of corrections.
- (j) That other person is under the jurisdiction of the department of corrections and the actor is an employee or a contractual employee of, or a volunteer with, a private vendor that operates a youth correctional facility under section 20g of the corrections code of 1953, 1953 PA 232, MCL 791.220g, who knows that the other person is under the jurisdiction of the department of corrections.
- (k) That other person is a prisoner or probationer under the jurisdiction of a county for purposes of imprisonment or a work program or other probationary program and the actor is an employee or a contractual employee of or a volunteer with the county or the department of corrections who knows that the other person is under the county's jurisdiction.

(1) The actor knows or has reason to know that a court has detained the victim in a facility while the victim is awaiting a trial or hearing, or committed the victim to a facility as a result of the victim having been found responsible for committing an act that would be a crime if committed by an adult, and the actor is an employee or contractual employee of, or a volunteer with, the facility in which the victim is detained or to which the victim was committed.

(2) Criminal sexual conduct in the second degree is a felony punishable as follows:

(a) By imprisonment for not more than 15 years.

(b) In addition to the penalty specified in subdivision (a), the court shall sentence the defendant to lifetime electronic monitoring under section 520n [FN2] if the violation involved sexual contact committed by an individual 17 years of age or older against an individual less than 13 years of age.

### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520D (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THIRD DEGREE**

Sec. 520d. (1) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the third degree if the person engages in sexual penetration with another person and if any of the following circumstances exist:

(a) That other person is at least 13 years of age and under 16 years of age.

(b) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the sexual penetration. Force or coercion includes but is not limited to any of the circumstances listed in section 520b(1)(f)(i) to (v). [FN1]

(c) The actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapable, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.

(d) That other person is related to the actor by blood or affinity to the third degree and the sexual penetration occurs under circumstances not otherwise prohibited by this chapter. It is an affirmative defense to a prosecution under this subdivision that the other person was in a position of authority over the defendant and used this authority to coerce the defendant to violate this subdivision. The defendant has the burden of proving this defense by a preponderance of the evidence. This subdivision does not apply if both persons are lawfully married to each other at the time of the alleged violation.

(e) That other person is at least 16 years of age but less than 18 years of age and a student at a public school or nonpublic school, and either of the following applies:

(i) The actor is a teacher, substitute teacher, or administrator of that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district. This subparagraph does

not apply if the other person is emancipated or if both persons are lawfully married to each other at the time of the alleged violation.

(ii) The actor is an employee or a contractual service provider of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district in which that other person is enrolled, or is a volunteer who is not a student in any public school or nonpublic school, or is an employee of this state or of a local unit of government of this state or of the United States assigned to provide any service to that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district, and the actor uses his or her employee, contractual, or volunteer status to gain access to, or to establish a relationship with, that other person.

(f) That other person is at least 16 years old but less than 26 years of age and is receiving special education services, and either of the following applies:

(i) The actor is a teacher, substitute teacher, administrator, employee, or contractual service provider of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district from which that other person receives the special education services. This subparagraph does not apply if both persons are lawfully married to each other at the time of the alleged violation.

(ii) The actor is a volunteer who is not a student in any public school or nonpublic school, or is an employee of this state or of a local unit of government of this state or of the United States assigned to provide any service to that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district, and the actor uses his or her employee, contractual, or volunteer status to gain access to, or to establish a relationship with, that other person.

(2) Criminal sexual conduct in the third degree is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than 15 years.

## **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520E (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN FOURTH DEGREE**

Sec. 520e. (1) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the fourth degree if he or she engages in sexual contact with another person and if any of the following circumstances exist:

(a) That other person is at least 13 years of age but less than 16 years of age, and the actor is 5 or more years older than that other person.

(b) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the sexual contact. Force or coercion includes, but is not limited to, any of the following circumstances:

(i) When the actor overcomes the victim through the actual application of physical force or physical violence.

(ii) When the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to use force or violence on the victim, and the victim believes that the actor has the present ability to execute that threat.

(iii) When the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim, or any other person, and the victim believes that the actor has the ability to execute that threat. As used in this subparagraph, “to retaliate” includes threats of physical punishment, kidnapping, or extortion.

(iv) When the actor engages in the medical treatment or examination of the victim in a manner or for purposes which are medically recognized as unethical or unacceptable.

(v) When the actor achieves the sexual contact through concealment or by the element of surprise.

(c) The actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapable, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.

(d) That other person is related to the actor by blood or affinity to the third degree and the sexual contact occurs under circumstances not otherwise prohibited by this chapter. It is an affirmative defense to a prosecution under this subdivision that the other person was in a position of authority over the defendant and used this authority to coerce the defendant to violate this subdivision. The defendant has the burden of proving this defense by a preponderance of the evidence. This subdivision does not apply if both persons are lawfully married to each other at the time of the alleged violation.

(e) The actor is a mental health professional and the sexual contact occurs during or within 2 years after the period in which the victim is his or her client or patient and not his or her spouse. The consent of the victim is not a defense to a prosecution under this subdivision. A prosecution under this subsection shall not be used as evidence that the victim is mentally incompetent.

(f) That other person is at least 16 years of age but less than 18 years of age and a student at a public school or nonpublic school, and either of the following applies:

(i) The actor is a teacher, substitute teacher, or administrator of that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district. This subparagraph does not apply if the other person is emancipated or if both persons are lawfully married to each other at the time of the alleged violation.

(ii) The actor is an employee or a contractual service provider of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district in which that other person is enrolled, or is a volunteer who is not a student in any public school or nonpublic school, or is an employee of this state or of a local unit of government of this state or of the United States assigned to provide any service to that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district, and the actor uses his or her employee, contractual, or volunteer status to gain access to, or to establish a relationship with, that other person.

(g) That other person is at least 16 years old but less than 26 years of age and is receiving special education services, and either of the following applies:

(i) The actor is a teacher, substitute teacher, administrator, employee, or contractual service provider of the public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district from which that other person receives the special education services. This subparagraph does not apply if both persons are lawfully married to each other at the time of the alleged violation.

(ii) The actor is a volunteer who is not a student in any public school or nonpublic school, or is an employee of this state or of a local unit of government of this state or of the United States assigned to provide any service to that public school, nonpublic school, school district, or intermediate school district, and the actor uses his or her employee, contractual, or volunteer status to gain access to, or to establish a relationship with, that other person.

(2) Criminal sexual conduct in the fourth degree is a misdemeanor punishable by imprisonment for not more than 2 years or a fine of not more than \$500.00, or both.

#### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520G (West 2009). ASSAULT WITH INTENT TO COMMIT CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT**

Sec. 520g. (1) Assault with intent to commit criminal sexual conduct involving sexual penetration shall be a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than 10 years.

(2) Assault with intent to commit criminal sexual conduct in the second degree is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than 5 years.

#### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520H (West 2009). CORROBORATION OF TESTIMONY OF VICTIM**

Sec. 520h. The testimony of a victim need not be corroborated in prosecutions under sections 520b to 520g.

#### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520I (West 2009). RESISTANCE BY VICTIM**

Sec. 520i. A victim need not resist the actor in prosecution under sections 520b to 520g.

#### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.158 (West 2009). CRIME AGAINST NATURE OR SODOMY; PENALTY**

Sec. 158. Any person who shall commit the abominable and detestable crime against nature either with mankind or with any animal shall be guilty of a felony, punishable by imprisonment in the state prison not more than 15 years, or if such person was at the time of the said offense a sexually delinquent person, may be punishable by imprisonment in the state prison for an indeterminate term, the minimum of which shall be 1 day and the maximum of which shall be life.

### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.338B (West 2009). GROSS INDECENCY; BETWEEN MALE AND FEMALE PERSONS**

Sec. 338b. Any male person who, in public or in private, commits or is a party to the commission of any act of gross indecency with a female person shall be guilty of a felony, punishable as provided in this section. Any female person who, in public or in private, commits or is a party to the commission of any act of gross indecency with a male person shall be guilty of a felony punishable as provided in this section. Any person who procures or attempts to procure the commission of any act of gross indecency by and between any male person and any female person shall be guilty of a felony punishable as provided in this section. Any person convicted of a felony as provided in this section shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for not more than 5 years, or by a fine of not more than \$2,500.00, or if such person was at the time of the said offense a sexually delinquent person, may be punishable by imprisonment in the state prison for an indeterminate term, the minimum of which shall be 1 day and the maximum of which shall be life.

### **MICH. COMP. LAWS ANN. § 750.520L (West 2009). OFFENSES INVOLVING SPOUSES**

Sec. 520l. A person may be charged and convicted under sections 520b to 520g [FN1] even though the victim is his or her legal spouse. However, a person may not be charged or convicted solely because his or her legal spouse is under the age of 16, mentally incapable, or mentally incapacitated.

## **MINNESOTA**

### **MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.293 (West 2009). SODOMY**

**Subdivision 1. Definition.** “Sodomy” means carnally knowing any person by the anus or by or with the mouth.

Subds. 2 to 4. Repealed by Laws 1977, c. 130, § 10, eff. May 20, 1977.

**Subd. 5. Consensual acts.** Whoever, in cases not coming within the provisions of sections 609.342 or 609.344, voluntarily engages in or submits to an act of sodomy with another may be sentenced to imprisonment for not more than one year or to payment of a fine of not more than \$3,000, or both.

## **MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.342 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

**Subdivision 1. Crime defined.** A person who engages in sexual penetration with another person, or in sexual contact with a person under 13 years of age as defined in section 609.341, subdivision 11, paragraph (c), is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the first degree if any of the following circumstances exists:

(a) the complainant is under 13 years of age and the actor is more than 36 months older than the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(b) the complainant is at least 13 years of age but less than 16 years of age and the actor is more than 48 months older than the complainant and in a position of authority over the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(c) circumstances existing at the time of the act cause the complainant to have a reasonable fear of imminent great bodily harm to the complainant or another;

(d) the actor is armed with a dangerous weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the complainant to reasonably believe it to be a dangerous weapon and uses or threatens to use the weapon or article to cause the complainant to submit;

(e) the actor causes personal injury to the complainant, and either of the following circumstances exist:

(i) the actor uses force or coercion to accomplish sexual penetration; or

(ii) the actor knows or has reason to know that the complainant is mentally impaired, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless;

(f) the actor is aided or abetted by one or more accomplices within the meaning of section 609.05, and either of the following circumstances exists:

(i) an accomplice uses force or coercion to cause the complainant to submit; or

(ii) an accomplice is armed with a dangerous weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the complainant reasonably to believe it to be a dangerous weapon and uses or threatens to use the weapon or article to cause the complainant to submit;



(g) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant and the complainant was under 16 years of age at the time of the sexual penetration. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense; or

(h) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant, the complainant was under 16 years of age at the time of the sexual penetration, and:

(i) the actor or an accomplice used force or coercion to accomplish the penetration;

(ii) the complainant suffered personal injury; or

(iii) the sexual abuse involved multiple acts committed over an extended period of time.

Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense.

**Subd. 2. Penalty.** (a) Except as otherwise provided in section 609.3455; or Minnesota Statutes 2004, section 609.109, a person convicted under subdivision 1 may be sentenced to imprisonment for not more than 30 years or to a payment of a fine of not more than \$40,000, or both.

(b) Unless a longer mandatory minimum sentence is otherwise required by law or the Sentencing Guidelines provide for a longer presumptive executed sentence, the court shall presume that an executed sentence of 144 months must be imposed on an offender convicted of violating this section. Sentencing a person in a manner other than that described in this paragraph is a departure from the Sentencing Guidelines.

(c) A person convicted under this section is also subject to conditional release under section 609.3455.

**Subd. 3. Stay.** Except when imprisonment is required under section 609.3455; or Minnesota Statutes 2004, section 609.109, if a person is convicted under subdivision 1, clause (g), the court may stay imposition or execution of the sentence if it finds that:

(a) a stay is in the best interest of the complainant or the family unit; and

(b) a professional assessment indicates that the offender has been accepted by and can respond to a treatment program.

If the court stays imposition or execution of sentence, it shall include the following as conditions of probation:

(1) incarceration in a local jail or workhouse;

(2) a requirement that the offender complete a treatment program; and

(3) a requirement that the offender have no unsupervised contact with the complainant until the offender has successfully completed the treatment program unless approved by the treatment program and the supervising correctional agent.

**MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.343 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

Subdivision 1. Crime defined. A person who engages in sexual contact with another person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the second degree if any of the following circumstances exists:

- (a) the complainant is under 13 years of age and the actor is more than 36 months older than the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense. In a prosecution under this clause, the state is not required to prove that the sexual contact was coerced;
- (b) the complainant is at least 13 but less than 16 years of age and the actor is more than 48 months older than the complainant and in a position of authority over the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;
- (c) circumstances existing at the time of the act cause the complainant to have a reasonable fear of imminent great bodily harm to the complainant or another;
- (d) the actor is armed with a dangerous weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the complainant to reasonably believe it to be a dangerous weapon and uses or threatens to use the dangerous weapon to cause the complainant to submit;
- (e) the actor causes personal injury to the complainant, and either of the following circumstances exist:
  - (i) the actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the sexual contact; or
  - (ii) the actor knows or has reason to know that the complainant is mentally impaired, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless;
- (f) the actor is aided or abetted by one or more accomplices within the meaning of section 609.05, and either of the following circumstances exists:
  - (i) an accomplice uses force or coercion to cause the complainant to submit; or
  - (ii) an accomplice is armed with a dangerous weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the complainant to reasonably believe it to be a dangerous weapon and uses or threatens to use the weapon or article to cause the complainant to submit;

(g) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant and the complainant was under 16 years of age at the time of the sexual contact. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense; or

(h) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant, the complainant was under 16 years of age at the time of the sexual contact, and:

(i) the actor or an accomplice used force or coercion to accomplish the contact;

(ii) the complainant suffered personal injury; or

(iii) the sexual abuse involved multiple acts committed over an extended period of time.

Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense.

### **MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.344 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

Subdivision 1. Crime defined. A person who engages in sexual penetration with another person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the third degree if any of the following circumstances exists:

(a) the complainant is under 13 years of age and the actor is no more than 36 months older than the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant shall be a defense;

(b) the complainant is at least 13 but less than 16 years of age and the actor is more than 24 months older than the complainant. In any such case if the actor is no more than 120 months older than the complainant, it shall be an affirmative defense, which must be proved by a preponderance of the evidence, that the actor reasonably believes the complainant to be 16 years of age or older. In all other cases, mistake as to the complainant's age shall not be a defense. If the actor in such a case is no more than 48 months but more than 24 months older than the complainant, the actor may be sentenced to imprisonment for not more than five years. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(c) the actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the penetration;

(d) the actor knows or has reason to know that the complainant is mentally impaired, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless;

(e) the complainant is at least 16 but less than 18 years of age and the actor is more than 48 months older than the complainant and in a position of authority over the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(f) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant and the complainant was at least 16 but under 18 years of age at the time of the sexual penetration. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(g) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant, the complainant was at least 16 but under 18 years of age at the time of the sexual penetration, and:

(i) the actor or an accomplice used force or coercion to accomplish the penetration;

(ii) the complainant suffered personal injury; or

(iii) the sexual abuse involved multiple acts committed over an extended period of time.

Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(h) the actor is a psychotherapist and the complainant is a patient of the psychotherapist and the sexual penetration occurred:

(i) during the psychotherapy session; or

(ii) outside the psychotherapy session if an ongoing psychotherapist-patient relationship exists.

Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(i) the actor is a psychotherapist and the complainant is a former patient of the psychotherapist and the former patient is emotionally dependent upon the psychotherapist;

(j) the actor is a psychotherapist and the complainant is a patient or former patient and the sexual penetration occurred by means of therapeutic deception. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(k) the actor accomplishes the sexual penetration by means of deception or false representation that the penetration is for a bona fide medical purpose. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(l) the actor is or purports to be a member of the clergy, the complainant is not married to the actor, and:

(i) the sexual penetration occurred during the course of a meeting in which the complainant sought or received religious or spiritual advice, aid, or comfort from the actor in private; or

(ii) the sexual penetration occurred during a period of time in which the complainant was meeting on an ongoing basis with the actor to seek or receive religious or spiritual advice, aid, or comfort in private. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(m) the actor is an employee, independent contractor, or volunteer of a state, county, city, or privately operated adult or juvenile correctional system, including, but not limited to, jails, prisons, detention centers, or work release facilities, and the complainant is a resident of a facility or under supervision of the correctional system. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(n) the actor provides or is an agent of an entity that provides special transportation service, the complainant used the special transportation service, and the sexual penetration occurred during or immediately before or after the actor transported the complainant. Consent by the complainant is not a defense; or

(o) the actor performs massage or other bodywork for hire, the complainant was a user of one of those services, and nonconsensual sexual penetration occurred during or immediately before or after the actor performed or was hired to perform one of those services for the complainant.

## **MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.345 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FOURTH DEGREE**

Subdivision 1. Crime defined. A person who engages in sexual contact with another person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the fourth degree if any of the following circumstances exists:

(a) the complainant is under 13 years of age and the actor is no more than 36 months older than the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age or consent to the act by the complainant is a defense. In a prosecution under this clause, the state is not required to prove that the sexual contact was coerced;

(b) the complainant is at least 13 but less than 16 years of age and the actor is more than 48 months older than the complainant or in a position of authority over the complainant. Consent by the complainant to the act is not a defense. In any such case, if the actor is no more than 120 months older than the complainant, it shall be an affirmative defense which must be proved by a preponderance of the evidence that the actor reasonably believes the complainant to be 16 years of age or older . In all other cases, mistake as to the complainant's age shall not be a defense;

(c) the actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the sexual contact;

(d) the actor knows or has reason to know that the complainant is mentally impaired, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless;

(e) the complainant is at least 16 but less than 18 years of age and the actor is more than 48 months older than the complainant and in a position of authority over the complainant. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(f) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant and the complainant was at least 16 but under 18 years of age at the time of the sexual contact. Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(g) the actor has a significant relationship to the complainant, the complainant was at least 16 but under 18 years of age at the time of the sexual contact, and:

(i) the actor or an accomplice used force or coercion to accomplish the contact;

(ii) the complainant suffered personal injury; or

(iii) the sexual abuse involved multiple acts committed over an extended period of time.

Neither mistake as to the complainant's age nor consent to the act by the complainant is a defense;

(h) the actor is a psychotherapist and the complainant is a patient of the psychotherapist and the sexual contact occurred:

(i) during the psychotherapy session; or

(ii) outside the psychotherapy session if an ongoing psychotherapist-patient relationship exists. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(i) the actor is a psychotherapist and the complainant is a former patient of the psychotherapist and the former patient is emotionally dependent upon the psychotherapist;

(j) the actor is a psychotherapist and the complainant is a patient or former patient and the sexual contact occurred by means of therapeutic deception. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(k) the actor accomplishes the sexual contact by means of deception or false representation that the contact is for a bona fide medical purpose. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(l) the actor is or purports to be a member of the clergy, the complainant is not married to the actor, and:

(i) the sexual contact occurred during the course of a meeting in which the complainant sought or received religious or spiritual advice, aid, or comfort from the actor in private; or

(ii) the sexual contact occurred during a period of time in which the complainant was meeting on an ongoing basis with the actor to seek or receive religious or spiritual advice, aid, or comfort in private. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(m) the actor is an employee, independent contractor, or volunteer of a state, county, city, or privately operated adult or juvenile correctional system, including, but not limited to, jails, prisons, detention centers, or work release facilities, and the complainant is a resident of a

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

facility or under supervision of the correctional system. Consent by the complainant is not a defense;

(n) the actor provides or is an agent of an entity that provides special transportation service, the complainant used the special transportation service, the complainant is not married to the actor, and the sexual contact occurred during or immediately before or after the actor transported the complainant. Consent by the complainant is not a defense; or

(o) the actor performs massage or other bodywork for hire, the complainant was a user of one of those services, and nonconsensual sexual contact occurred during or immediately before or after the actor performed or was hired to perform one of those services for the complainant.

## **MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.3451 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FIFTH DEGREE**

**Subdivision 1. Crime defined.** A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the fifth degree:

(1) if the person engages in nonconsensual sexual contact; or

(2) the person engages in masturbation or lewd exhibition of the genitals in the presence of a minor under the age of 16, knowing or having reason to know the minor is present.

For purposes of this section, “sexual contact” has the meaning given in section 609.341, subdivision 11, paragraph (a), clauses (i) and (iv), but does not include the intentional touching of the clothing covering the immediate area of the buttocks. Sexual contact also includes the intentional removal or attempted removal of clothing covering the complainant’s intimate parts or undergarments, and the nonconsensual touching by the complainant of the actor’s intimate parts, effected by the actor, if the action is performed with sexual or aggressive intent.

**Subd. 2. Penalty.** A person convicted under subdivision 1 may be sentenced to imprisonment for not more than one year or to a payment of a fine of not more than \$3,000, or both.

**Subd. 3. Felony.** A person is guilty of a felony and may be sentenced to imprisonment for not more than five years or to payment of a fine of not more than \$10,000, or both, if the person violates subdivision 1, clause (2), after having been previously convicted of or adjudicated delinquent for violating subdivision 1, clause (2); section 617.23, subdivision 2, clause (1); or a statute from another state in conformity with subdivision 1, clause (2), or section 617.23, subdivision 2, clause (1).

## **MINN. STAT. ANN. § 609.349 (West 2009). VOLUNTARY RELATIONSHIPS**

A person does not commit criminal sexual conduct under sections 609.342, clauses (a) and (b), 609.343, clauses (a) and (b), 609.344, clauses (a), (b), (d), (e), and (n), and 609.345, clauses (a), (b), (d), (e), and (n), if the actor and complainant were adults cohabiting in an ongoing voluntary sexual relationship at the time of the alleged offense, or if the complainant is the actor's legal spouse, unless the couple is living apart and one of them has filed for legal separation or dissolution of the marriage. Nothing in this section shall be construed to prohibit or restrain the prosecution for any other offense committed by one legal spouse against the other.

## **MISSISSIPPI**

### **MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-95 (West 2009). "SEXUAL BATTERY" DEFINED**

(1) A person is guilty of sexual battery if he or she engages in sexual penetration with:

(a) Another person without his or her consent;

(b) A mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless person;

(c) A child at least fourteen (14) but under sixteen (16) years of age, if the person is thirty-six (36) or more months older than the child; or

(d) A child under the age of fourteen (14) years of age, if the person is twenty-four (24) or more months older than the child.

(2) A person is guilty of sexual battery if he or she engages in sexual penetration with a child under the age of eighteen (18) years if the person is in a position of trust or authority over the child including without limitation the child's teacher, counselor, physician, psychiatrist, psychologist, minister, priest, physical therapist, chiropractor, legal guardian, parent, stepparent, aunt, uncle, scout leader or coach.

### **MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-97 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY, DEFINITIONS**

For purposes of sections 97-3-95 through 97-3-103 the following words shall have the meaning ascribed herein unless the context otherwise requires:

(a) "Sexual penetration" includes cunnilingus, fellatio, buggery or pederasty, any penetration of the genital or anal openings of another person's body by any part of a person's body, and insertion of any object into the genital or anal openings of another person's body.



(b) A “mentally defective person” is one who suffers from a mental disease, defect or condition which renders that person temporarily or permanently incapable of knowing the nature and quality of his or her conduct.

(c) A “mentally incapacitated person” is one rendered incapable of knowing or controlling his or her conduct, or incapable of resisting an act due to the influence of any drug, narcotic, anesthetic, or other substance administered to that person without his or her consent.

(d) A “physically helpless person” is one who is unconscious or one who for any other reason is physically incapable of communicating an unwillingness to engage in an act.

### **MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-99 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY, DEFENSE OF MARRIAGE**

A person is not guilty of any offense under Sections 97-3-95 through 97-3-103 if the alleged victim is that person's legal spouse and at the time of the alleged offense such person and the alleged victim are not separated and living apart; provided, however, that the legal spouse of the alleged victim may be found guilty of sexual battery if the legal spouse engaged in forcible sexual penetration without the consent of the alleged victim.

### **MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-101 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY, PUNISHMENT**

(1) Every person who shall be convicted of sexual battery under Section 97-3-95(1)(a), (b), or (2) shall be imprisoned in the State Penitentiary for a period of not more than thirty (30) years, and for a second or subsequent such offense shall be imprisoned in the penitentiary for not more than forty (40) years.

(2)(a) Every person who shall be convicted of sexual battery under Section 97-3-95(1)(c) who is at least eighteen (18) but under twenty-one (21) years of age shall be imprisoned for not more than five (5) years in the State Penitentiary or fined not more than Five Thousand Dollars (\$5,000.00), or both;

(b) Every person who shall be convicted of sexual battery under Section 97-3-95(1)(c) who is twenty-one (21) years of age or older shall be imprisoned not more than thirty (30) years in the State Penitentiary or fined not more than Ten Thousand Dollars (\$10,000.00), or both, for the first offense, and not more than forty (40) years in the State Penitentiary for each subsequent offense.

(3) Every person who shall be convicted of sexual battery under Section 97-3-95(1)(d) who is eighteen (18) years of age or older shall be imprisoned for life in the State Penitentiary or such lesser term of imprisonment as the court may determine, but not less than twenty (20) years.

(4) Every person who shall be convicted of sexual battery who is thirteen (13) years of age or older but under eighteen (18) years of age shall be sentenced to such imprisonment, fine or other sentence as the court, in its discretion, may determine.

### **MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-99 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY; DEFENSE**

A person is not guilty of any offense under Sections 97-3-95 through 97-3-103 if the alleged victim is that person's legal spouse and at the time of the alleged offense such person and the alleged victim are not separated and living apart; provided, however, that the legal spouse of the alleged victim may be found guilty of sexual battery if the legal spouse engaged in forcible sexual penetration without the consent of the alleged victim.

### **MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-3-71 (West 2009). ASSAULT WITH INTENT TO RAVISH**

Every person who shall be convicted of an assault with intent to forcibly ravish any female of previous chaste character shall be punished by imprisonment in the penitentiary for life, or for such shorter time as may be fixed by the jury, or by the court upon the entry of a plea of guilty.

### **MISS. CODE ANN. § 97-29-59 (West 2009). SODOMY**

Every person who shall be convicted of the detestable and abominable crime against nature committed with mankind or with a beast, shall be punished by imprisonment in the penitentiary for a term of not more than ten years.

## **MISSOURI**

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.020 (West 2009). MISTAKE AS TO INCAPACITY OR AGE**

1. Whenever in this chapter the criminality of conduct depends upon a victim's being incapacitated, no crime is committed if the actor reasonably believed that the victim was not incapacitated and reasonably believed that the victim consented to the act. The defendant shall have the burden of injecting the issue of belief as to capacity and consent.
2. Whenever in this chapter the criminality of conduct depends upon a child being thirteen years of age or younger, it is no defense that the defendant believed the child to be older.
3. Whenever in this chapter the criminality of conduct depends upon a child being under seventeen years of age, it is an affirmative defense that the defendant reasonably believed that the child was seventeen years of age or older.

4. Consent is not an affirmative defense to any offense under Chapter 566 if the alleged victim is less than twelve years of age.

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.023 (West 2009). MARRIAGE AS DEFENSE**

It shall be an affirmative defense to prosecutions pursuant to sections 566.032, 566.034, 566.062, 566.064, 566.068, and 566.090 that the defendant was married to the victim at the time of the offense.

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.030 (West 2009). RAPE**

1. A person commits the crime of forcible rape if such person has sexual intercourse with another person by the use of forcible compulsion. Forcible compulsion includes the use of a substance administered without a victim's knowledge or consent which renders the victim physically or mentally impaired so as to be incapable of making an informed consent to sexual intercourse.

2. Forcible rape or an attempt to commit forcible rape is a felony for which the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than five years, unless:

(1) In the course thereof the actor inflicts serious physical injury or displays a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument in a threatening manner or subjects the victim to sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with more than one person, in which case the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than fifteen years;

(2) The victim is a child less than twelve years of age, in which case the required term of imprisonment is life imprisonment without eligibility for probation or parole until the defendant has served not less than thirty years of such sentence or unless the defendant has reached the age of seventy-five years and has served at least fifteen years of such sentence, unless such forcible rape is described under subdivision (3) of this subsection; or

(3) The victim is a child less than twelve years of age and such forcible rape was outrageously or wantonly vile, horrible or inhumane, in that it involved torture or depravity of mind, in which case, the required term of imprisonment is life imprisonment without eligibility for probation, parole or conditional release.

3. Subsection 4 of section 558.019, RSMo, shall not apply to the sentence of a person who has pleaded guilty to or has been found guilty of forcible rape when the victim is under the age of twelve, and **“life imprisonment”** shall mean imprisonment for the duration of a person's natural life for the purposes of this section.

4. No person found guilty of or pleading guilty to forcible rape or an attempt to commit forcible rape shall be granted a suspended imposition of sentence or suspended execution of sentence.

**Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.023 (West 2009). MARRIAGE TO VICTIM, AT TIME OF OFFENSE, AFFIRMATIVE DEFENSE, FOR CERTAIN CRIMES**

It shall be an affirmative defense to prosecutions pursuant to sections 566.032, 566.034, 566.062, 566.064, 566.068, and 566.090 that the defendant was married to the victim at the time of the offense.

**Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.032 (West 2009). STATUTORY RAPE, FIRST DEGREE, PENALTIES**

1. A person commits the crime of statutory rape in the first degree if he has sexual intercourse with another person who is less than fourteen years old.
2. Statutory rape in the first degree or an attempt to commit statutory rape in the first degree is a felony for which the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than five years, unless in the course thereof the actor inflicts serious physical injury on any person, displays a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument in a threatening manner, subjects the victim to sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with more than one person, or the victim is less than twelve years of age in which case the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than ten years.

**Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.034 (West 2009). STATUTORY RAPE, SECOND DEGREE, PENALTY**

1. A person commits the crime of statutory rape in the second degree if being twenty-one years of age or older, he has sexual intercourse with another person who is less than seventeen years of age.
2. Statutory rape in the second degree is a class C felony.

**Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.062 (West 2009). STATUTORY SODOMY, FIRST DEGREE, PENALTIES**

1. A person commits the crime of statutory sodomy in the first degree if he has deviate sexual intercourse with another person who is less than fourteen years old.

2. Statutory sodomy in the first degree or an attempt to commit statutory sodomy in the first degree is a felony for which the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than five years, unless in the course thereof the actor inflicts serious physical injury on any person, displays a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument in a threatening manner, subjects the victim to sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with more than one person, or the victim is less than twelve years of age, in which case the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than ten years.

**Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.064 (West 2009). STATUTORY SODOMY, SECOND DEGREE, PENALTY**

1. A person commits the crime of statutory sodomy in the second degree if being twenty-one years of age or older, he has deviate sexual intercourse with another person who is less than seventeen years of age.

2. Statutory sodomy in the second degree is a class C felony.

**Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.040 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

1. A person commits the crime of sexual assault if he has sexual intercourse with another person knowing that he does so without that person's consent.

2. Sexual assault is a class C felony.

**Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.060 (West 2009). FORCIBLE SODOMY**

1. A person commits the crime of forcible sodomy if such person has deviate sexual intercourse with another person by the use of forcible compulsion. Forcible compulsion includes the use of a substance administered without a victim's knowledge or consent which renders the victim physically or mentally impaired so as to be incapable of making an informed consent to sexual intercourse.

2. Forcible sodomy or an attempt to commit forcible sodomy is a felony for which the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than five years, unless:

(1) In the course thereof the actor inflicts serious physical injury or displays a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument in a threatening manner or subjects the victim to sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with more than one person, in which case the authorized term of imprisonment is life imprisonment or a term of years not less than ten years; or

---

**RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**

(2) The victim is a child less than twelve years of age, in which case the required term of imprisonment is life imprisonment without eligibility for probation or parole until the defendant has served not less than thirty years of such sentence or unless the defendant has reached the age of seventy-five years and has served at least fifteen years of such sentence, unless such forcible sodomy is described under subdivision (3) of this subsection; or

(3) The victim is a child less than twelve years of age and such forcible sodomy was outrageously or wantonly vile, horrible or inhumane, in that it involved torture or depravity of mind, in which case, the required term of imprisonment is life imprisonment without eligibility for probation, parole or conditional release.

3. Subsection 4 of section 558.019, RSMo, shall not apply to the sentence of a person who has pleaded guilty to or has been found guilty of forcible sodomy when the victim is under the age of twelve, and “**life imprisonment**” shall mean imprisonment for the duration of a person's natural life for the purposes of this section.

4. No person found guilty of or pleading guilty to forcible sodomy or an attempt to commit forcible sodomy shall be granted a suspended imposition of sentence or suspended execution of sentence.

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.070 (West 2009). DEVIATE SEXUAL ASSAULT**

1. A person commits the crime of deviate sexual assault if he has deviate sexual intercourse with another person knowing that he does so without that person's consent.

2. Deviate sexual assault is a class C felony.

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.090 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

1. A person commits the crime of sexual misconduct in the first degree if such person purposely subjects another person to sexual contact without that person's consent.

2. Sexual misconduct in the first degree is a class A misdemeanor unless the actor has previously been convicted of an offense under this chapter or unless in the course thereof the actor displays a deadly weapon in a threatening manner or the offense is committed as a part of a ritual or ceremony, in which case it is a class D felony.

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.093 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

1. A person commits the crime of sexual misconduct in the second degree if such person:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

(1) Exposes his or her genitals under circumstances in which he or she knows that his or her conduct is likely to cause affront or alarm;

(2) Has sexual contact in the presence of a third person or persons under circumstances in which he or she knows that such conduct is likely to cause affront or alarm; or

(3) Has sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse in a public place in the presence of a third person.

2. Sexual misconduct in the second degree is a class B misdemeanor unless the actor has previously been convicted of an offense under this chapter, in which case it is a class A misdemeanor.

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.095 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

1. A person commits the crime of sexual misconduct in the third degree if he solicits or requests another person to engage in sexual conduct under circumstances in which he knows that his requests or solicitation is likely to cause affront or alarm.

2. Sexual misconduct in the third degree is a class C misdemeanor.

### **Mo. ANN. STAT. § 566.100 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE**

1. A person commits the crime of sexual abuse if he subjects another person to sexual contact by the use of forcible compulsion.

2. Sexual abuse is a class C felony unless in the course thereof the actor inflicts serious physical injury or displays a deadly weapon or dangerous instrument in a threatening manner or subjects the victim to sexual contact with more than one person or the victim is less than fourteen years of age, in which case the crime is a class B felony.

## **MONTANA**

### **MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-501 (2009). DEFINITIONS**

(1)(a) As used in 45-5-503, the term "without consent" means:

(i) the victim is compelled to submit by force against the victim or another; or

(ii) subject to subsections (1)(b) and (1)(c), the victim is incapable of consent because the victim is:

(A) mentally defective or incapacitated;

(B) physically helpless;

(C) overcome by deception, coercion, or surprise;

(D) less than 16 years old;

(E) incarcerated in an adult or juvenile correctional, detention, or treatment facility or is on probation or parole and the perpetrator is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the supervising authority and has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim, unless the act is part of a lawful search;

(F) receiving services from a youth care facility, as defined in 52-2-602, and the perpetrator:

(I) has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim or is providing treatment to the victim; and

(II) is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the youth care facility; or

(G) admitted to a mental health facility, as defined in 53-21-102, is admitted to a community-based facility or a residential facility, as those terms are defined in 53-20-102, or is receiving community-based services, as defined in 53-20-102, and the perpetrator:

(I) has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim or is providing treatment to the victim; and

(II) is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the facility or community-based service.

(b) Subsection (1)(a)(ii)(E) does not apply if the individuals are married to each other and one of the individuals involved is on probation or parole and the other individual is a probation or parole officer of a supervising authority.

(c) Subsections (1)(a)(ii)(F) and (1)(a)(ii)(G) do not apply if the individuals are married to each other and one of the individuals involved is a patient in or resident of a facility, is a recipient of community-based services, or is receiving services from a youth care facility and the other individual is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the facility or community-based service.

(2) As used in subsection (1), the term "force" means:

(a) the infliction, attempted infliction, or threatened infliction of bodily injury or the commission of a forcible felony by the offender; or



(b) the threat of substantial retaliatory action that causes the victim to reasonably believe that the offender has the ability to execute the threat.

(3) As used in 45-5-502 and this section, the following definitions apply:

(a) "Parole":

(i) in the case of an adult offender, has the meaning provided in 46-1-202; and

(ii) in the case of a juvenile offender, means supervision of a youth released from a state youth correctional facility, as defined in 41-5-103, to the supervision of the department of corrections.

(b) "Probation" means:

(i) in the case of an adult offender, release without imprisonment of a defendant found guilty of a crime and subject to the supervision of a supervising authority; and

(ii) in the case of a juvenile offender, supervision of the juvenile by a youth court pursuant to Title 41, chapter 5.

(c) "Supervising authority" includes a court, including a youth court, a county, or the department of corrections.

## **MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-502 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(1) A person who knowingly subjects another person to any sexual contact without consent commits the offense of sexual assault.

(2) A person convicted of sexual assault shall be fined not to exceed \$500 or be imprisoned in the county jail for a term not to exceed 6 months, or both.

(3) If the victim is less than 16 years old and the offender is 3 or more years older than the victim or if the offender inflicts bodily injury upon anyone in the course of committing sexual assault, the offender shall be punished by life imprisonment or by imprisonment in the state prison for a term of not less than 4 years, unless the judge makes a written finding that there is good cause to impose a term of less than 4 years and imposes a term of less than 4 years, or more than 100 years and may be fined not more than \$50,000.

(4) An act "in the course of committing sexual assault" includes an attempt to commit the offense or flight after the attempt or commission.

(5) (a) Subject to subsections (5)(b) and (5)(c), consent is ineffective under this section if the victim is:

(i) incarcerated in an adult or juvenile correctional, detention, or treatment facility or is on probation or parole and the perpetrator is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the supervising authority and has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim, unless the act is part of a lawful search;

(ii) less than 14 years old and the offender is 3 or more years older than the victim;

(iii) receiving services from a youth care facility, as defined in 52-2-602, and the perpetrator:

(A) has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim or is providing treatment to the victim; and

(B) is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the youth care facility; or

(iv) admitted to a mental health facility, as defined in 53-21-102, is admitted to a community-based facility or a residential facility, as those terms are defined in 53-20-102, or is receiving community-based services, as defined in 53-20-102, and the perpetrator:

(A) has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim or is providing treatment to the victim; and

(B) is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the facility or community-based service.

(b) Subsection (5)(a)(i) does not apply if one of the parties is on probation or parole and the other party is a probation or parole officer of the supervising authority and the parties are married to each other.

(c) Subsections (5)(a)(iii) and (5)(a)(iv) do not apply if the individuals are married to each other and one of the individuals involved is a patient in or resident of a facility, is a recipient of community-based services, or is receiving services from a youth care facility and the other individual is an employee, contractor, or volunteer of the facility or community-based service.

## **MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-503 (2009). SEXUAL INTERCOURSE WITHOUT CONSENT**

(1) A person who knowingly has sexual intercourse without consent with another person commits the offense of sexual intercourse without consent. A person may not be convicted under this section based on the age of the person's spouse, as provided in 45-5-501(1)(a)(ii)(D).

(2) A person convicted of sexual intercourse without consent shall be punished by life imprisonment or by imprisonment in the state prison for a term of not less than 2 years or more than 100 years and may be fined not more than \$50,000, except as provided in 46-18-219, 46-18-222, and subsections (3) and (4) of this section.

(3)(a) If the victim is less than 16 years old and the offender is 4 or more years older than the victim or if the offender inflicts bodily injury upon anyone in the course of committing sexual intercourse without consent, the offender shall be punished by life imprisonment or by imprisonment in the state prison for a term of not less than 4 years or more than 100 years and may be fined not more than \$50,000, except as provided in 46-18-219 and 46-18-222.

(b) If two or more persons are convicted of sexual intercourse without consent with the same victim in an incident in which each offender was present at the location where another offender's offense occurred during a time period in which each offender could have reasonably known of the other's offense, each offender shall be punished by life imprisonment or by imprisonment in the state prison for a term of not less than 5 years or more than 100 years and may be fined not more than \$50,000, except as provided in 46-18-219 and 46-18-222.

(c) If the offender was previously convicted of an offense under this section or of an offense under the laws of another state or of the United States that if committed in this state would be an offense under this section and if the offender inflicted serious bodily injury upon a person in the course of committing each offense, the offender shall be:

(i) punished by death as provided in 46-18-301 through 46-18-310, unless the offender is less than 18 years of age at the time of the commission of the offense; or

(ii) punished as provided in 46-18-219.

(4)(a) If the victim was 12 years of age or younger and the offender was 18 years of age or older at the time of the offense, the offender:

(i) shall be punished by imprisonment in a state prison for a term of 100 years. The court may not suspend execution or defer imposition of the first 25 years of a sentence of imprisonment imposed under this subsection (4)(a)(i) except as provided in 46-18-222, and during the first 25 years of imprisonment, the offender is not eligible for parole.

(ii) may be fined an amount not to exceed \$50,000; and

(iii) shall be ordered to enroll in and successfully complete the educational phase and the cognitive and behavioral phase of a sexual offender treatment program provided or approved by the department of corrections.

(b) If the offender is released after the mandatory minimum period of imprisonment, the offender is subject to supervision by the department of corrections for the remainder of the offender's life and shall participate in the program for continuous, satellite-based monitoring provided for in 46-23-1010.

(5) In addition to any sentence imposed under subsection (2) or (3), after determining the financial resources and future ability of the offender to pay restitution as required by 46-18-242, the court shall require the offender, if able, to pay the victim's reasonable medical

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

and counseling costs that result from the offense. The amount, method, and time of payment must be determined in the same manner as provided for in 46-18-244.

(6) As used in subsections (3) and (4), an act "in the course of committing sexual intercourse without consent" includes an attempt to commit the offense or flight after the attempt or commission.

## **MONT. CODE ANN. § 45-5-511 (2009). PROVISIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO SEXUAL CRIMES**

(1) When criminality depends on the victim being less than 16 years old, it is a defense for the offender to prove that he reasonably believed the child to be above that age. Such belief shall not be deemed reasonable if the child is less than 14 years old.

(2) No evidence concerning the sexual conduct of the victim is admissible in prosecutions under this part except evidence of the victim's past sexual conduct with the offender or evidence of specific instances of the victim's sexual activity to show the origin of semen, pregnancy, or disease which is at issue in the prosecution.

(3) If the defendant proposes for any purpose to offer evidence described in subsection

(2), the trial judge shall order a hearing out of the presence of the jury to determine whether the proposed evidence is admissible under subsection (2).

(4) Evidence of failure to make a timely complaint or immediate outcry does not raise any presumption as to the credibility of the victim.

(5) Resistance by the victim is not required to show lack of consent. Force, fear, or threat is sufficient alone to show lack of consent.

## **NEBRASKA**

### **NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-317 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; LEGISLATIVE INTENT**

It is the intent of the Legislature to enact laws dealing with sexual assault and related criminal sexual offenses which will protect the dignity of the victim at all stages of judicial process, which will insure that the alleged offender in a criminal sexual offense case have preserved the constitutionally guaranteed due process of law procedures, and which will establish a system of investigation, prosecution, punishment, and rehabilitation for the welfare and benefit of the citizens of this state as such system is employed in the area of criminal sexual offenses.

## **NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-319 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; FIRST DEGREE; PENALTY**

(1) Any person who subjects another person to sexual penetration (a) without the consent of the victim, (b) who knew or should have known that the victim was mentally or physically incapable of resisting or appraising the nature of his or her conduct, or (c) when the actor is nineteen years of age or older and the victim is at least twelve but less than sixteen years of age is guilty of sexual assault in the first degree.

(2) Sexual assault in the first degree is a Class II felony. The sentencing judge shall consider whether the actor caused serious personal injury to the victim in reaching a decision on the sentence.

(3) Any person who is found guilty of sexual assault in the first degree for a second time when the first conviction was pursuant to this section or any other state or federal law with essentially the same elements as this section shall be sentenced to a mandatory minimum term of twenty-five years in prison.

## **NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-320 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT; SECOND OR THIRD DEGREE; PENALTY**

(1) Any person who subjects another person to sexual contact (a) without consent of the victim, or (b) who knew or should have known that the victim was physically or mentally incapable of resisting or appraising the nature of his or her conduct is guilty of sexual assault in either the second degree or third degree.

(2) Sexual assault shall be in the second degree and is a Class III felony if the actor shall have caused serious personal injury to the victim.

(3) Sexual assault shall be in the third degree and is a Class I misdemeanor if the actor shall not have caused serious personal injury to the victim.

## **NEB. REV. STAT. § 28-323 (2009). DOMESTIC ASSAULT; PENALTIES**

(1) A person commits the offense of domestic assault in the third degree if he or she:

(a) Intentionally and knowingly causes bodily injury to his or her intimate partner; or

(b) Places, by physical menace, his or her intimate partner in fear of imminent bodily injury.

(2) A person commits the offense of domestic assault in the second degree if he or she intentionally and knowingly causes bodily injury to his or her intimate partner with a dangerous instrument.

(3) A person commits the offense of domestic assault in the first degree if he or she intentionally and knowingly causes serious bodily injury to his or her intimate partner.

(4) Violation of subsection (1) of this section is a Class I misdemeanor, except that for any second or subsequent violation of such subsection within twelve years after the date of the current conviction, any person so offending against the same intimate partner is guilty of a Class IV felony.

(5) Violation of subsection (2) of this section is a Class IIIA felony, except that for any second or subsequent violation of such subsection within twelve years after the date of the current conviction, any person so offending against the same intimate partner is guilty of a Class III felony.

(6) Violation of subsection (3) of this section is a Class III felony, except that for any second or subsequent violation under such subsection within twelve years after the date of the current conviction, any person so offending against the same intimate partner is guilty of a Class II felony.

(7) For purposes of this section, intimate partner means a spouse; a former spouse; persons who have a child in common whether or not they have been married or lived together at any time; and persons who are or were involved in a dating relationship. For purposes of this subsection, dating relationship means frequent, intimate associations primarily characterized by the expectation of affectional or sexual involvement, but does not include a casual relationship or an ordinary association between persons in a business or social context.

## NEVADA

### NEV. REV. STAT. ANN. § 200.364 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS

Amended

### NEV. REV. STAT. ANN. § 200.366 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT: DEFINITION; PENALTIES

1. A person who subjects another person to sexual penetration, or who forces another person to make a sexual penetration on himself or another, or on a beast, against the will of the victim or under conditions in which the perpetrator knows or should know that the victim is mentally or physically incapable of resisting or understanding the nature of his conduct, is guilty of sexual assault.

2. Except as otherwise provided in subsections 3 and 4, a person who commits a sexual assault is guilty of a category A felony and shall be punished:

(a) If substantial bodily harm to the victim results from the actions of the defendant committed in connection with or as a part of the sexual assault, by imprisonment in the state prison:

(1) For life without the possibility of parole; or

(2) For life with the possibility of parole, with eligibility for parole beginning when a minimum of 15 years has been served.

(b) If no substantial bodily harm to the victim results, by imprisonment in the state prison for life with the possibility of parole, with eligibility for parole beginning when a minimum of 10 years has been served.

3. Except as otherwise provided in subsection 4, a person who commits a sexual assault against a child under the age of 16 years is guilty of a category A felony and shall be punished:

(a) If the crime results in substantial bodily harm to the child, by imprisonment in the state prison for life without the possibility of parole.

(b) Except as otherwise provided in paragraph (c), if the crime does not result in substantial bodily harm to the child, by imprisonment in the state prison for life with the possibility of parole, with eligibility for parole beginning when a minimum of 25 years has been served.

(c) If the crime is committed against a child under the age of 14 years and does not result in substantial bodily harm to the child, by imprisonment in the state prison for life with the possibility of parole, with eligibility for parole beginning when a minimum of 35 years has been served.

4. A person who commits a sexual assault against a child under the age of 16 years and who has been previously convicted of:

(a) A sexual assault pursuant to this section or any other sexual offense against a child; or

(b) An offense committed in another jurisdiction that, if committed in this State, would constitute a sexual assault pursuant to this section or any other sexual offense against a child,

is guilty of a category A felony and shall be punished by imprisonment in the state prison for life without the possibility of parole.

5. For the purpose of this section, “other sexual offense against a child” means any act committed by an adult upon a child constituting:

(a) Incest pursuant to NRS 201.180;

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

---

(b) Lewdness with a child pursuant to NRS 201.230;

(c) Sado-masochistic abuse pursuant to NRS 201.262; or

(d) Luring a child using a computer, system or network pursuant to NRS 201.560, if punished as a felony.

## **NEV. REV. STAT. ANN. § 200.373 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT OF SPOUSE BY SPOUSE**

It is no defense to a charge of sexual assault that the perpetrator was, at the time of the assault, married to the victim, if the assault was committed by force or by the threat of force.

## **NEW HAMPSHIRE**

### **N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:1 (2009). DEFINITIONS**

In this chapter:

I. “Actor” means a person accused of a crime of sexual assault.

I-a. “Affinity” means a relation which one spouse because of marriage has to blood relatives of the other spouse.

I-b. “Genital openings” means the internal or external genitalia including, but not limited to, the vagina, labia majora, labia minora, vulva, urethra or perineum.

I-c. “Pattern of sexual assault” means committing more than one act under RSA 632-A:2 or RSA 632-A:3, or both, upon the same victim over a period of 2 months or more and within a period of 5 years.

II. “Retaliate” means to undertake action against the interests of the victim, including, but not limited to:

(a) Physical or mental torment or abuse.

(b) Kidnapping, false imprisonment or extortion.

(c) Public humiliation or disgrace.



III. "Serious personal injury" means extensive bodily injury or disfigurement, extreme mental anguish or trauma, disease or loss or impairment of a sexual or reproductive organ.

IV. "Sexual contact" means the intentional touching whether directly, through clothing, or otherwise, of the victim's or actor's sexual or intimate parts, including emissions, tongue, anus, breasts, and buttocks. Sexual contact includes only that aforementioned conduct which can be reasonably construed as being for the purpose of sexual arousal or gratification.

V. (a) "Sexual penetration" means:

(1) Sexual intercourse; or

(2) Cunnilingus; or

(3) Fellatio; or

(4) Anal intercourse; or

(5) Any intrusion, however slight, of any part of the actor's body, including emissions, or any object manipulated by the actor into genital or anal openings of the victim's body; or

(6) Any intrusion, however slight, of any part of the victim's body, including emissions, or any object manipulated by the victim into the oral, genital, or anal openings of the actor's body; or

(7) Any act which forces, coerces, or intimidates the victim to perform any sexual penetration as defined in subparagraphs (1)-(6) on the actor, on another person, or on himself.

(b) Emissions include semen, urine, and feces. Emission is not required as an element of any form of sexual penetration.

(c) "Objects" include animals as defined in RSA 644:8, II.

VI. "Therapy" means the treatment of bodily, mental, or behavioral disorders by remedial agents or methods.

## **N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:2 (2009). AGGRAVATED FELONIOUS SEXUAL ASSAULT**

I. A person is guilty of the felony of aggravated felonious sexual assault if such person engages in sexual penetration with another person under any of the following circumstances:

- (a) When the actor overcomes the victim through the actual application of physical force, physical violence or superior physical strength.
- (b) When the victim is physically helpless to resist.
- (c) When the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to use physical violence or superior physical strength on the victim, and the victim believes that the actor has the present ability to execute these threats.
- (d) When the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to retaliate against the victim, or any other person, and the victim believes that the actor has the ability to execute these threats in the future.
- (e) When the victim submits under circumstances involving false imprisonment, kidnapping or extortion.
- (f) When the actor, without the prior knowledge or consent of the victim, administers or has knowledge of another person administering to the victim any intoxicating substance which mentally incapacitates the victim.
- (g) When the actor provides therapy, medical treatment or examination of the victim and in the course of that therapeutic or treating relationship or within one year of termination of that therapeutic or treating relationship:
- (1) Acts in a manner or for purposes which are not professionally recognized as ethical or acceptable; or
- (2) Uses this position as such provider to coerce the victim to submit.
- (h) When, except as between legally married spouses, the victim is mentally defective and the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective.
- (i) When the actor through concealment or by the element of surprise is able to cause sexual penetration with the victim before the victim has an adequate chance to flee or resist.
- (j) When, except as between legally married spouses, the victim is 13 years of age or older and under 16 years of age and:
- (1) the actor is a member of the same household as the victim; or
- (2) the actor is related by blood or affinity to the victim.
- (k) When, except as between legally married spouses, the victim is 13 years of age or older and under 18 years of age and the actor is in a position of authority over the victim and uses this authority to coerce the victim to submit.
- (l) When the victim is less than 13 years of age.

(m) When at the time of the sexual assault, the victim indicates by speech or conduct that there is not freely given consent to performance of the sexual act.

(n) When the actor is in a position of authority over the victim and uses this authority to coerce the victim to submit under any of the following circumstances:

(1) When the actor has direct supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim by virtue of the victim being incarcerated in a correctional institution, the secure psychiatric unit, or juvenile detention facility where the actor is employed; or

(2) When the actor is a probation or parole officer or a juvenile probation and parole officer who has direct supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim while the victim is on parole or probation or under juvenile probation.

Consent of the victim under any of the circumstances set forth in subparagraph (n) shall not be considered a defense.

II. A person is guilty of aggravated felonious sexual assault without penetration when he intentionally touches whether directly, through clothing, or otherwise, the genitalia of a person under the age of 13 under circumstances that can be reasonably construed as being for the purpose of sexual arousal or gratification.

III. A person is guilty of aggravated felonious sexual assault when such person engages in a pattern of sexual assault against another person, not the actor's legal spouse, who is less than 16 years of age. The mental state applicable to the underlying acts of sexual assault need not be shown with respect to the element of engaging in a pattern of sexual assault.

IV. A person is guilty of aggravated felonious sexual assault when such person engages in sexual penetration as defined in RSA 632-A:1, V with another person under 18 years of age whom such person knows to be his or her ancestor, descendant, brother or sister of the whole or half blood, uncle, aunt, nephew, or niece. The relationships referred to herein include blood relationships without regard to legitimacy, stepchildren, and relationships of parent and child by adoption.

## **N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:3 (2009). FELONIOUS SEXUAL ASSAULT**

A person is guilty of a class B felony if such person:

I. Subjects a person to sexual contact and causes serious personal injury to the victim under any of the circumstances named in RSA 632-A:2; or

II. Engages in sexual penetration with a person, other than his legal spouse, who is 13 years of age or older and under 16 years of age where the age difference between the actor and the other person is 4 years or more; or

III. Engages in sexual contact with a person other than his legal spouse who is under 13 years of age.

IV. Engages in sexual contact with the person when the actor is in a position of authority over the person and uses that authority to coerce the victim to submit under any of the following circumstances:

(a) When the actor has direct supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim by virtue of the victim being incarcerated in a correctional institution, the secure psychiatric unit, or juvenile detention facility where the actor is employed; or

(b) When the actor is a probation or parole officer or a juvenile probation and parole officer who has direct supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim while the victim is on parole or probation or under juvenile probation.

Consent of the victim under any of the circumstances set forth in paragraph IV shall not be considered a defense.

## **N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:4 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

I. A person is guilty of a class A misdemeanor under any of the following circumstances:

(a) When the actor subjects another person who is 13 years of age or older to sexual contact under any of the circumstances named in RSA 632-A:2.

(b) When the actor subjects another person, other than the actor's legal spouse, who is 13 years of age or older and under 16 years of age to sexual contact where the age difference between the actor and the other person is 5 years or more.

(c) In the absence of any of the circumstances set forth in RSA 632-A:2, when the actor engages in sexual penetration with a person, other than the actor's legal spouse, who is 13 years of age or older and under 16 years of age where the age difference between the actor and the other person is 4 years or less.

II. A person found guilty under subparagraph I(c) of this section shall not be required to register as a sexual offender under RSA 651-B.

III. A person is guilty of a misdemeanor if such person engages in sexual contact or sexual penetration with another person when the actor is in a position of authority over the person under any of the following circumstances:

(a) When the actor has direct supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim by virtue of the victim being incarcerated in a correctional institution, the secure psychiatric unit, or juvenile detention facility where the actor is employed; or

(b) When the actor is a probation or parole officer or a juvenile probation and parole officer who has direct supervisory or disciplinary authority over the victim while the victim is on parole or probation or under juvenile probation.

Consent of the victim under any of the circumstances set forth in paragraph III shall not be considered a defense.

### **N.H. REV. STAT. ANN. § 632-A:5 (2009). SPOUSE AS VICTIM; EVIDENCE OF HUSBAND AND WIFE**

An actor commits a crime under this chapter even though the victim is the actor's legal spouse. Laws attaching a privilege against the disclosure of communications between husband and wife are inapplicable to proceedings under this chapter.

## **NEW JERSEY**

### **N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-5 (West 2009). PROVISIONS GENERALLY APPLICABLE TO CHAPTER 14**

a. The prosecutor shall not be required to offer proof that the victim resisted, or resisted to the utmost, or reasonably resisted the sexual assault in any offense proscribed by this chapter.

b. No actor shall be presumed to be incapable of committing a crime under this chapter because of age or impotency or marriage to the victim.

c. It shall be no defense to a prosecution for a crime under this chapter that the actor believed the victim to be above the age stated for the offense, even if such a mistaken belief was reasonable.

### **N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-1 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

The following definitions apply to this chapter:

a. "Actor" means a person accused of an offense proscribed under this act;

b. "Victim" means a person alleging to have been subjected to offenses proscribed by this act;

c. "Sexual penetration" means vaginal intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio or anal intercourse between persons or insertion of the hand, finger or object into the anus or vagina either by

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

the actor or upon the actor's instruction. The depth of insertion shall not be relevant as to the question of commission of the crime;

d. "Sexual contact" means an intentional touching by the victim or actor, either directly or through clothing, of the victim's or actor's intimate parts for the purpose of degrading or humiliating the victim or sexually arousing or sexually gratifying the actor. Sexual contact of the actor with himself must be in view of the victim whom the actor knows to be present;

e. "Intimate parts" means the following body parts: sexual organs, genital area, anal area, inner thigh, groin, buttock or breast of a person;

f. "Severe personal injury" means severe bodily injury, disfigurement, disease, incapacitating mental anguish or chronic pain;

g. "Physically helpless" means that condition in which a person is unconscious or is physically unable to flee or is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to act;

h. "Mentally defective" means that condition in which a person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders that person temporarily or permanently incapable of understanding the nature of his conduct, including, but not limited to, being incapable of providing consent;

i. "Mentally incapacitated" means that condition in which a person is rendered temporarily incapable of understanding or controlling his conduct due to the influence of a narcotic, anesthetic, intoxicant, or other substance administered to that person without his prior knowledge or consent, or due to any other act committed upon that person which rendered that person incapable of appraising or controlling his conduct;

j. "Coercion" as used in this chapter shall refer to those acts which are defined as criminal coercion in section 2C:13-5(1), (2), (3), (4), (6) and (7).

## **N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-2 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

a. An actor is guilty of aggravated sexual assault if he commits an act of sexual penetration with another person under any one of the following circumstances:

(1) The victim is less than 13 years old;

(2) The victim is at least 13 but less than 16 years old; and

(a) The actor is related to the victim by blood or affinity to the third degree, or

(b) The actor has supervisory or disciplinary power over the victim by virtue of the actor's legal, professional, or occupational status, or

(c) The actor is a resource family parent, a guardian, or stands in loco parentis within the household;

(3) The act is committed during the commission, or attempted commission, whether alone or with one or more other persons, of robbery, kidnapping, homicide, aggravated assault on another, burglary, arson or criminal escape;

(4) The actor is armed with a weapon or any object fashioned in such a manner as to lead the victim to reasonably believe it to be a weapon and threatens by word or gesture to use the weapon or object;

(5) The actor is aided or abetted by one or more other persons and the actor uses physical force or coercion;

(6) The actor uses physical force or coercion and severe personal injury is sustained by the victim;

(7) The victim is one whom the actor knew or should have known was physically helpless, mentally defective or mentally incapacitated.

Aggravated sexual assault is a crime of the first degree.

b. An actor is guilty of sexual assault if he commits an act of sexual contact with a victim who is less than 13 years old and the actor is at least four years older than the victim.

c. An actor is guilty of sexual assault if he commits an act of sexual penetration with another person under any one of the following circumstances:

(1) The actor uses physical force or coercion, but the victim does not sustain severe personal injury;

(2) The victim is on probation or parole, or is detained in a hospital, prison or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary power over the victim by virtue of the actor's legal, professional or occupational status;

(3) The victim is at least 16 but less than 18 years old and:

(a) The actor is related to the victim by blood or affinity to the third degree; or

(b) The actor has supervisory or disciplinary power of any nature or in any capacity over the victim; or

(c) The actor is a resource family parent, a guardian, or stands in loco parentis within the household;

(4) The victim is at least 13 but less than 16 years old and the actor is at least four years older than the victim.

Sexual assault is a crime of the second degree.

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

## **N.J. STAT. ANN. § 2C:14-3 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONTACT**

a. An actor is guilty of aggravated criminal sexual contact if he commits an act of sexual contact with the victim under any of the circumstances set forth in 2C:14-2a. (2) through (7).

Aggravated criminal sexual contact is a crime of the third degree.

b. An actor is guilty of criminal sexual contact if he commits an act of sexual contact with the victim under any of the circumstances set forth in section 2C:14-2c. (1) through (4).

Criminal sexual contact is a crime of the fourth degree.

## **NEW MEXICO**

### **N.M. STAT. ANN. § 30-9-10 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

As used in Sections 30-9-10 through 30-9-16 NMSA1978:

A. "force or coercion" means:

(1) the use of physical force or physical violence;

(2) the use of threats to use physical violence or physical force against the victim or another when the victim believes that there is a present ability to execute the threats;

(3) the use of threats, including threats of physical punishment, kidnapping, extortion or retaliation directed against the victim or another when the victim believes that there is an ability to execute the threats;

(4) the perpetration of criminal sexual penetration or criminal sexual contact when the perpetrator knows or has reason to know that the victim is unconscious, asleep or otherwise physically helpless or suffers from a mental condition that renders the victim incapable of understanding the nature or consequences of the act; or

(5) the perpetration of criminal sexual penetration or criminal sexual contact by a psychotherapist on his patient, with or without the patient's consent, during the course of psychotherapy or within a period of one year following the termination of psychotherapy.

Physical or verbal resistance of the victim is not an element of force or coercion;

B. "great mental anguish" means psychological or emotional damage that requires psychiatric or psychological treatment or care, either on an inpatient or outpatient basis, and is characterized by extreme behavioral change or severe physical symptoms;

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS



C. “patient” means a person who seeks or obtains psychotherapy;

D. “personal injury” means bodily injury to a lesser degree than great bodily harm and includes, but is not limited to, disfigurement, mental anguish, chronic or recurrent pain, pregnancy or disease or injury to a sexual or reproductive organ;

E. “position of authority” means that position occupied by a parent, relative, household member, teacher, employer or other person who, by reason of that position, is able to exercise undue influence over a child;

F. “psychotherapist” means a person who is or purports to be a:

(1) licensed physician who practices psychotherapy;

(2) licensed psychologist;

(3) licensed social worker;

(4) licensed nurse;

(5) counselor;

(6) substance abuse counselor;

(7) psychiatric technician;

(8) mental health worker;

(9) marriage and family therapist;

(10) hypnotherapist; or

(11) minister, priest, rabbi or other similar functionary of a religious organization acting in his role as a pastoral counselor;

G. “psychotherapy” means professional treatment or assessment of a mental or an emotional illness, symptom or condition;

H. “school” means any public or private school, including the New Mexico military institute, the New Mexico school for the blind and visually impaired, the New Mexico school for the deaf, the New Mexico boys' school, the New Mexico youth diagnostic and development center, the Los Lunas medical center, the Fort Stanton hospital, the New Mexico behavioral health institute at Las Vegas and the Carrie Tingley crippled children's hospital, that offers a program of instruction designed to educate a person in a particular place, manner and subject area. “School” does not include a college or university; and

I. “spouse” means a legal husband or wife, unless the couple is living apart or either husband or wife has filed for separate maintenance or divorce.

## **N.M. STAT. ANN. § 30-9-11 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL PENETRATION**

A. Criminal sexual penetration is the unlawful and intentional causing of a person to engage in sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio or anal intercourse or the causing of penetration, to any extent and with any object, of the genital or anal openings of another, whether or not there is any emission.

B. Criminal sexual penetration does not include medically indicated procedures.

C. Aggravated criminal sexual penetration consists of all criminal sexual penetration perpetrated on a child under thirteen years of age with an intent to kill or with a depraved mind regardless of human life. Whoever commits aggravated criminal sexual penetration is guilty of a first degree felony for aggravated criminal sexual penetration.

D. Criminal sexual penetration in the first degree consists of all criminal sexual penetration perpetrated:

(1) on a child under thirteen years of age; or

(2) by the use of force or coercion that results in great bodily harm or great mental anguish to the victim.

Whoever commits criminal sexual penetration in the first degree is guilty of a first degree felony.

E. Criminal sexual penetration in the second degree consists of all criminal sexual penetration perpetrated:

(1) by the use of force or coercion on a child thirteen to eighteen years of age;

(2) on an inmate confined in a correctional facility or jail when the perpetrator is in a position of authority over the inmate;

(3) by the use of force or coercion that results in personal injury to the victim;

(4) by the use of force or coercion when the perpetrator is aided or abetted by one or more persons;

(5) in the commission of any other felony; or

(6) when the perpetrator is armed with a deadly weapon.

Whoever commits criminal sexual penetration in the second degree is guilty of a second degree felony. Whoever commits criminal sexual penetration in the second degree when the victim is a child who is thirteen to eighteen years of age is guilty of a second degree felony for a sexual offense against a child and, notwithstanding the provisions of Section 31-18-15 NMSA 1978, shall be sentenced to a minimum term of imprisonment of three years, which shall not be suspended or deferred. The imposition of a minimum, mandatory term of imprisonment pursuant to the provisions of this subsection shall not be interpreted to preclude the imposition of sentencing enhancements pursuant to the provisions of the Criminal Sentencing Act.

F. Criminal sexual penetration in the third degree consists of all criminal sexual penetration perpetrated through the use of force or coercion not otherwise specified in this section.

Whoever commits criminal sexual penetration in the third degree is guilty of a third degree felony.

G. Criminal sexual penetration in the fourth degree consists of all criminal sexual penetration:

(1) not defined in Subsections D through F of this section perpetrated on a child thirteen to sixteen years of age when the perpetrator is at least eighteen years of age and is at least four years older than the child and not the spouse of that child; or

(2) perpetrated on a child thirteen to eighteen years of age when the perpetrator, who is a licensed school employee, an unlicensed school employee, a school contract employee, a school health service provider or a school volunteer, and who is at least eighteen years of age and is at least four years older than the child and not the spouse of that child, learns while performing services in or for a school that the child is a student in a school.

Whoever commits criminal sexual penetration in the fourth degree is guilty of a fourth degree felony.

## **N.M. STAT. ANN. § 30-9-12 (West 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONTACT**

A. Criminal sexual contact is the unlawful and intentional touching of or application of force, without consent, to the unclothed intimate parts of another who has reached his eighteenth birthday, or intentionally causing another who has reached his eighteenth birthday to touch one's intimate parts.

B. Criminal sexual contact does not include touching by a psychotherapist on his patient that is:

(1) inadvertent;

(2) casual social contact not intended to be sexual in nature; or

(3) generally recognized by mental health professionals as being a legitimate element of psychotherapy.

C. Criminal sexual contact in the fourth degree consists of all criminal sexual contact perpetrated:

(1) by the use of force or coercion that results in personal injury to the victim;

(2) by the use of force or coercion when the perpetrator is aided or abetted by one or more persons; or

(3) when the perpetrator is armed with a deadly weapon.

Whoever commits criminal sexual contact in the fourth degree is guilty of a fourth degree felony.

D. Criminal sexual contact is a misdemeanor when perpetrated with the use of force or coercion.

E. For the purposes of this section, “intimate parts” means the primary genital area, groin, buttocks, anus or breast.

## **NEW YORK**

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.00 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; DEFINITIONS OF TERMS**

Amended

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.05 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; LACK OF CONSENT**

1. Whether or not specifically stated, it is an element of every offense defined in this article that the sexual act was committed without consent of the victim.

2. Lack of consent results from:

(a) Forcible compulsion; or

(b) Incapacity to consent; or

(c) Where the offense charged is sexual abuse or forcible touching, any circumstances, in addition to forcible compulsion or incapacity to consent, in which the victim does not expressly or impliedly acquiesce in the actor's conduct; or

(d) Where the offense charged is rape in the third degree as defined in subdivision three of section 130.25, or criminal sexual act in the third degree as defined in subdivision three of section 130.40, in addition to forcible compulsion, circumstances under which, at the time of the act of intercourse, oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct, the victim clearly expressed that he or she did not consent to engage in such act, and a reasonable person in the actor's situation would have understood such person's words and acts as an expression of lack of consent to such act under all the circumstances.

3. A person is deemed incapable of consent when he or she is:

(a) less than seventeen years old; or

(b) mentally disabled; or

(c) mentally incapacitated; or

(d) physically helpless; or

(e) committed to the care and custody of the state department of correctional services or a hospital, as such term is defined in subdivision two of section four hundred of the correction law, and the actor is an employee, not married to such person, who knows or reasonably should know that such person is committed to the care and custody of such department or hospital. For purposes of this paragraph, "employee" means (i) an employee of the state department of correctional services who performs professional duties in a state correctional facility consisting of providing custody, medical or mental health services, counseling services, educational programs, or vocational training for inmates;

(ii) an employee of the division of parole who performs professional duties in a state correctional facility and who provides institutional parole services pursuant to section two hundred fifty-nine-e of the executive law; or

(iii) an employee of the office of mental health who performs professional duties in a state correctional facility or hospital, as such term is defined in subdivision two of section four hundred of the correction law, consisting of providing custody, or medical or mental health services for such inmates; or

(iv) a person, including a volunteer, providing direct services to inmates in the state correctional facility in which the victim is confined at the time of the offense pursuant to a contractual arrangement with the state department of correctional services or, in the case of a volunteer, a written agreement with such department, provided that the person received written notice concerning the provisions of this paragraph; or

(f) committed to the care and custody of a local correctional facility, as such term is defined in subdivision two of section forty of the correction law, and the actor is an employee, not

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

married to such person, who knows or reasonably should know that such person is committed to the care and custody of such facility. For purposes of this paragraph, “employee” means an employee of the local correctional facility where the person is committed who performs professional duties consisting of providing custody, medical or mental health services, counseling services, educational services, or vocational training for inmates. For purposes of this paragraph, “employee” shall also mean a person, including a volunteer or a government employee of the state division of parole or a local health, education or probation agency, providing direct services to inmates in the local correctional facility in which the victim is confined at the time of the offense pursuant to a contractual arrangement with the local correctional department or, in the case of such a volunteer or government employee, a written agreement with such department, provided that such person received written notice concerning the provisions of this paragraph; or

(g) committed to or placed with the office of children and family services and in residential care, and the actor is an employee, not married to such person, who knows or reasonably should know that such person is committed to or placed with such office of children and family services and in residential care. For purposes of this paragraph, “employee” means an employee of the office of children and family services or of a residential facility who performs duties consisting of providing custody, medical or mental health services, counseling services, educational services, or vocational training for persons committed to or placed with the office of children and family services and in residential care; or

(h) a client or patient and the actor is a health care provider or mental health care provider charged with rape in the third degree as defined in section 130.25, criminal sexual act in the third degree as defined in section 130.40, aggravated sexual abuse in the fourth degree as defined in section 130.65-a, or sexual abuse in the third degree as defined in section 130.55, and the act of sexual conduct occurs during a treatment session, consultation, interview, or examination.

## **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.10 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; LIMITATION; DEFENSES**

1. In any prosecution under this article in which the victim's lack of consent is based solely upon his or her incapacity to consent because he or she was mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless, it is an affirmative defense that the defendant, at the time he or she engaged in the conduct constituting the offense, did not know of the facts or conditions responsible for such incapacity to consent.
2. Conduct performed for a valid medical or mental health care purpose shall not constitute a violation of any section of this article in which incapacity to consent is based on the circumstances set forth in paragraph (h) of subdivision three of section 130.05 of this article.
3. In any prosecution for the crime of rape in the third degree as defined in section 130.25, criminal sexual act in the third degree as defined in section 130.40, aggravated sexual abuse in the fourth degree as defined in section 130.65-a, or sexual abuse in the third degree as

---

### **RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS**

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

defined in section 130.55 in which incapacity to consent is based on the circumstances set forth in paragraph (h) of subdivision three of section 130.05 of this article it shall be an affirmative defense that the client or patient consented to such conduct charged after having been expressly advised by the health care or mental health care provider that such conduct was not performed for a valid medical purpose.

4. In any prosecution under this article in which the victim's lack of consent is based solely on his or her incapacity to consent because he or she was less than seventeen years old, mentally disabled, or a client or patient and the actor is a health care provider, it shall be a defense that the defendant was married to the victim as defined in subdivision four of section 130.00 of this article.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.16 (McKinney 2009). SEX OFFENSES; CORROBORATION**

A person shall not be convicted of any offense defined in this article of which lack of consent is an element but results solely from incapacity to consent because of the victim's mental defect, or mental incapacity, or an attempt to commit the same, solely on the testimony of the victim, unsupported by other evidence tending to:

(a) Establish that an attempt was made to engage the victim in sexual intercourse, oral sexual conduct, anal sexual conduct, or sexual contact, as the case may be, at the time of the occurrence; and

(b) Connect the defendant with the commission of the offense or attempted offense.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.20 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT**

A person is guilty of sexual misconduct when:

1. He or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person without such person's consent; or
2. He or she engages in oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct with another person without such person's consent; or
3. He or she engages in sexual conduct with an animal or a dead human body.

Sexual misconduct is a class A misdemeanor.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.25 (McKinney 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

A person is guilty of rape in the third degree when:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

1. He or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person who is incapable of consent by reason of some factor other than being less than seventeen years old;
2. Being twenty-one years old or more, he or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person less than seventeen years old; or
3. He or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person without such person's consent where such lack of consent is by reason of some factor other than incapacity to consent.

Rape in the third degree is a class E felony.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.30 (McKinney 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

A person is guilty of rape in the second degree when:

1. being eighteen years old or more, he or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person less than fifteen years old; or
2. he or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person who is incapable of consent by reason of being mentally disabled or mentally incapacitated.

It shall be an affirmative defense to the crime of rape in the second degree as defined in subdivision one of this section that the defendant was less than four years older than the victim at the time of the act.

Rape in the second degree is a class D felony.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.35 (McKinney 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

A person is guilty of rape in the first degree when he or she engages in sexual intercourse with another person:

1. By forcible compulsion; or
2. Who is incapable of consent by reason of being physically helpless; or
3. Who is less than eleven years old; or
4. Who is less than thirteen years old and the actor is eighteen years old or more.

Rape in the first degree is a class B felony.



### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.40 (McKinney 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ACT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

A person is guilty of criminal sexual act in the third degree when:

1. He or she engages in oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct with a person who is incapable of consent by reason of some factor other than being less than seventeen years old;
2. Being twenty-one years old or more, he or she engages in oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct with a person less than seventeen years old; or
3. He or she engages in oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct with another person without such person's consent where such lack of consent is by reason of some factor other than incapacity to consent.

Criminal sexual act in the third degree is a class E felony.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.45 (McKinney 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ACT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

A person is guilty of criminal sexual act in the second degree when:

1. being eighteen years old or more, he or she engages in oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct with another person less than fifteen years old; or
2. he or she engages in oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct with another person who is incapable of consent by reason of being mentally disabled or mentally incapacitated.

It shall be an affirmative defense to the crime of criminal sexual act in the second degree as defined in subdivision one of this section that the defendant was less than four years older than the victim at the time of the act.

Criminal sexual act in the second degree is a class D felony.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.50 (McKinney 2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL ACT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

A person is guilty of criminal sexual act in the first degree when he or she engages in oral sexual conduct or anal sexual conduct with another person:

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

---

1. By forcible compulsion; or
2. Who is incapable of consent by reason of being physically helpless; or
3. Who is less than eleven years old; or
4. Who is less than thirteen years old and the actor is eighteen years old or more.

Criminal sexual act in the first degree is a class B felony.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.52 (McKinney 2009). FORCIBLE TOUCHING**

A person is guilty of forcible touching when such person intentionally, and for no legitimate purpose, forcibly touches the sexual or other intimate parts of another person for the purpose of degrading or abusing such person; or for the purpose of gratifying the actor's sexual desire.

For the purposes of this section, forcible touching includes squeezing, grabbing or pinching.

Forcible touching is a class A misdemeanor.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.53 (McKinney 2009). PERSISTENT SEXUAL ABUSE**

A person is guilty of persistent sexual abuse when he or she commits the crime of forcible touching, as defined in section 130.52 of this article, sexual abuse in the third degree, as defined in section 130.55 of this article, or sexual abuse in the second degree, as defined in section 130.60 of this article, and, within the previous ten year period, has been convicted two or more times, in separate criminal transactions for which sentence was imposed on separate occasions, of forcible touching, as defined in section 130.52 of this article, sexual abuse in the third degree as defined in section 130.55 of this article, sexual abuse in the second degree, as defined in section 130.60 of this article, or any offense defined in this article, of which the commission or attempted commission thereof is a felony.

Persistent sexual abuse is a class E felony.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.55 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the third degree when he or she subjects another person to sexual contact without the latter's consent; except that in any prosecution under this section, it is an affirmative defense that (a) such other person's lack of consent was due solely to incapacity to consent by reason of being less than seventeen years old, and (b)

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

such other person was more than fourteen years old, and (c) the defendant was less than five years older than such other person.

Sexual abuse in the third degree is a class B misdemeanor.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.60 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the second degree when he or she subjects another person to sexual contact and when such other person is:

1. Incapable of consent by reason of some factor other than being less than seventeen years old; or
2. Less than fourteen years old.

Sexual abuse in the second degree is a class A misdemeanor.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.65 (McKinney 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the first degree when he or she subjects another person to sexual contact:

1. By forcible compulsion; or
2. When the other person is incapable of consent by reason of being physically helpless; or
3. When the other person is less than eleven years old.

Sexual abuse in the first degree is a class D felony.

### **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.65-A (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FOURTH DEGREE**

Amended

**N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.66 (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE  
IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

Amended

**N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.67 (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE  
IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

Amended

**N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.70 (McKinney 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE  
IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

Amended

**N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.90 (McKinney 2009). FACILITATING A SEX OFFENSE  
WITH A CONTROLLED SUBSTANCE**

A person is guilty of facilitating a sex offense with a controlled substance when he or she:

1. knowingly and unlawfully possesses a controlled substance or any preparation, compound, mixture or substance that requires a prescription to obtain and administers such substance or preparation, compound, mixture or substance that requires a prescription to obtain to another person without such person's consent and with intent to commit against such person conduct constituting a felony defined in this article; and
2. commits or attempts to commit such conduct constituting a felony defined in this article.

Facilitating a sex offense with a controlled substance is a class D felony.

**N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.91 (McKinney 2009). SEXUALLY MOTIVATED FELONY**

1. A person commits a sexually motivated felony when he or she commits a specified offense for the purpose, in whole or substantial part, of his or her own direct sexual gratification.
2. A "specified offense" is a felony offense defined by any of the following provisions of this chapter: assault in the second degree as defined in [section 120.05](#), assault in the first degree as defined in [section 120.10](#), gang assault in the second degree as defined in [section 120.06](#), gang assault in the first degree as defined in [section 120.07](#), stalking in the first degree as

[RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS](#)

defined in section 120.60, manslaughter in the second degree as defined in subdivision one of section 125.15, manslaughter in the first degree as defined in section 125.20, murder in the second degree as defined in section 125.25, aggravated murder as defined in section 125.26, murder in the first degree as defined in section 125.27, kidnapping in the second degree as defined in section 135.20, kidnapping in the first degree as defined in section 135.25, burglary in the third degree as defined in section 140.20, burglary in the second degree as defined in section 140.25, burglary in the first degree as defined in section 140.30, arson in the second degree as defined in section 150.15, arson in the first degree as defined in section 150.20, robbery in the third degree as defined in section 160.05, robbery in the second degree as defined in section 160.10, robbery in the first degree as defined in section 160.15, promoting prostitution in the second degree as defined in section 230.30, promoting prostitution in the first degree as defined in section 230.32, compelling prostitution as defined in section 230.33, disseminating indecent material to minors in the first degree as defined in section 235.22, use of a child in a sexual performance as defined in section 263.05, promoting an obscene sexual performance by a child as defined in section 263.10, promoting a sexual performance by a child as defined in section 263.15, or any felony attempt or conspiracy to commit any of the foregoing offenses.

## **N.Y. PENAL LAW § 130.95 (McKinney 2009). PREDATORY SEXUAL ASSAULT**

A person is guilty of predatory sexual assault when he or she commits the crime of rape in the first degree, criminal sexual act in the first degree, aggravated sexual abuse in the first degree, or course of sexual conduct against a child in the first degree, as defined in this article, and when:

1. In the course of the commission of the crime or the immediate flight therefrom, he or she:
  - (a) Causes serious physical injury to the victim of such crime; or
  - (b) Uses or threatens the immediate use of a dangerous instrument; or
2. He or she has engaged in conduct constituting the crime of rape in the first degree, criminal sexual act in the first degree, aggravated sexual abuse in the first degree, or course of sexual conduct against a child in the first degree, as defined in this article, against one or more additional persons; or
3. He or she has previously been subjected to a conviction for a felony defined in this article, incest as defined in section 255.25 of this chapter or use of a child in a sexual performance as defined in section 263.05 of this chapter.

Predatory sexual assault is a class A-II felony.

# NORTH CAROLINA

## N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.1 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS

As used in this Article, unless the context requires otherwise:

(1) “Mentally disabled” means (i) a victim who suffers from mental retardation, or (ii) a victim who suffers from a mental disorder, either of which temporarily or permanently renders the victim substantially incapable of appraising the nature of his or her conduct, or of resisting the act of vaginal intercourse or a sexual act, or of communicating unwillingness to submit to the act of vaginal intercourse or a sexual act.

(2) “Mentally incapacitated” means a victim who due to any act committed upon the victim is rendered substantially incapable of either appraising the nature of his or her conduct, or resisting the act of vaginal intercourse or a sexual act.

(3) “Physically helpless” means (i) a victim who is unconscious; or (ii) a victim who is physically unable to resist an act of vaginal intercourse or a sexual act or communicate unwillingness to submit to an act of vaginal intercourse or a sexual act.

(4) “Sexual act” means cunnilingus, fellatio, analingus, or anal intercourse, but does not include vaginal intercourse. Sexual act also means the penetration, however slight, by any object into the genital or anal opening of another person's body: provided, that it shall be an affirmative defense that the penetration was for accepted medical purposes.

(5) “Sexual contact” means (i) touching the sexual organ, anus, breast, groin, or buttocks of any person, (ii) a person touching another person with their own sexual organ, anus, breast, groin, or buttocks, or (iii) a person ejaculating, emitting, or placing semen, urine, or feces upon any part of another person.

(6) “Touching” as used in subdivision (5) of this section, means physical contact with another person, whether accomplished directly, through the clothing of the person committing the offense, or through the clothing of the victim.

## N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.2 (West 2009). FIRST-DEGREE RAPE

(a) A person is guilty of rape in the first degree if the person engages in vaginal intercourse:

(1) With a victim who is a child under the age of 13 years and the defendant is at least 12 years old and is at least four years older than the victim; or

(2) With another person by force and against the will of the other person, and:

a. Employs or displays a dangerous or deadly weapon or an article which the other person reasonably believes to be a dangerous or deadly weapon; or

b. Inflicts serious personal injury upon the victim or another person; or

c. The person commits the offense aided and abetted by one or more other persons.

(b) Any person who commits an offense defined in this section is guilty of a Class B1 felony.

(c) Upon conviction, a person convicted under this section has no rights to custody of or rights of inheritance from any child born as a result of the commission of the rape, nor shall the person have any rights related to the child under Chapter 48 or Subchapter 1 of Chapter 7B of the General Statutes.

### **N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.3 (West 2009). SECOND-DEGREE RAPE**

(a) A person is guilty of rape in the second degree if the person engages in vaginal intercourse with another person:

(1) By force and against the will of the other person; or

(2) Who is mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless, and the person performing the act knows or should reasonably know the other person is mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.

(b) Any person who commits the offense defined in this section is guilty of a Class C felony.

(c) Upon conviction, a person convicted under this section has no rights to custody of or rights of inheritance from any child conceived during the commission of the rape, nor shall the person have any rights related to the child under Chapter 48 or Subchapter 1 of Chapter 7B of the General Statutes.

### **N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.4 (West 2009). FIRST-DEGREE SEXUAL OFFENSE**

(a) A person is guilty of a sexual offense in the first degree if the person engages in a sexual act:

(1) With a victim who is a child under the age of 13 years and the defendant is at least 12 years old and is at least four years older than the victim; or

(2) With another person by force and against the will of the other person, and:

a. Employs or displays a dangerous or deadly weapon or an article which the other person reasonably believes to be a dangerous or deadly weapon; or

- b. Inflicts serious personal injury upon the victim or another person; or
  - c. The person commits the offense aided and abetted by one or more other persons.
- (b) Any person who commits an offense defined in this section is guilty of a Class B1 felony.

**N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.5 (West 2009). SECOND-DEGREE SEXUAL OFFENSE**

- (a) A person is guilty of a sexual offense in the second degree if the person engages in a sexual act with another person:
- (1) By force and against the will of the other person; or
  - (2) Who is mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless, and the person performing the act knows or should reasonably know that the other person is mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.
- (b) Any person who commits the offense defined in this section is guilty of a Class C felony.

**N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.5A (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

- (a) A person is guilty of sexual battery if the person, for the purpose of sexual arousal, sexual gratification, or sexual abuse, engages in sexual contact with another person:
- (1) By force and against the will of the other person; or
  - (2) Who is mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless, and the person performing the act knows or should reasonably know that the other person is mentally disabled, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless.
- (b) Any person who commits the offense defined in this section is guilty of a Class A1 misdemeanor.

**N.C. GEN. STAT. ANN. §14-27.7 (West 2009). INTERCOURSE AND SEXUAL OFFENSES WITH CERTAIN VICTIMS; CONSENT NO DEFENSE**

- (a) If a defendant who has assumed the position of a parent in the home of a minor victim engages in vaginal intercourse or a sexual act with a victim who is a minor residing in the home, or if a person having custody of a victim of any age or a person who is an agent or



employee of any person, or institution, whether such institution is private, charitable, or governmental, having custody of a victim of any age engages in vaginal intercourse or a sexual act with such victim, the defendant is guilty of a Class E felony. Consent is not a defense to a charge under this section.

(b) If a defendant, who is a teacher, school administrator, student teacher, school safety officer, or coach, at any age, or who is other school personnel, and who is at least four years older than the victim engages in vaginal intercourse or a sexual act with a victim who is a student, at any time during or after the time the defendant and victim were present together in the same school, but before the victim ceases to be a student, the defendant is guilty of a Class G felony, except when the defendant is lawfully married to the student. The term “same school” means a school at which the student is enrolled and the defendant is employed, assigned, or volunteers. A defendant who is school personnel, other than a teacher, school administrator, student teacher, school safety officer, or coach, and is less than four years older than the victim and engages in vaginal intercourse or a sexual act with a victim who is a student, is guilty of a Class A1 misdemeanor. This subsection shall apply unless the conduct is covered under some other provision of law providing for greater punishment. Consent is not a defense to a charge under this section. For purposes of this subsection, the terms “school”, “school personnel”, and “student” shall have the same meaning as in G.S. 14-202.4(d). For purposes of this subsection, the term “school safety officer” shall include a school resource officer or any other person who is regularly present in a school for the purpose of promoting and maintaining safe and orderly schools.

### **N.C. GEN. STAT. § 14-27.8 (West 2009). NO DEFENSE THAT VICTIM IS SPOUSE OF PERSON COMMITTING ACT**

A person may be prosecuted under this Article whether or not the victim is the person's legal spouse at the time of the commission of the alleged rape or sexual offense.

## **NORTH DAKOTA**

### **N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-02 (2009). DEFINITIONS**

In sections 12.1-20-03 through 12.1-20-12:

1. “Coercion” means to exploit fear or anxiety through intimidation, compulsion, domination, or control with the intent to compel conduct or compliance.
2. “Deviate sexual act” means any form of sexual contact with an animal, bird, or dead person.
3. “Object” means anything used in commission of a sexual act other than the person of the actor.

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

4. "Sexual act" means sexual contact between human beings consisting of contact between the penis and the vulva, the penis and the anus, the mouth and the penis, the mouth and the vulva, or any other portion of the human body and the penis, anus, or vulva; or the use of an object which comes in contact with the victim's anus, vulva, or penis. For the purposes of this subsection, sexual contact between the penis and the vulva, the penis and the anus, any other portion of the human body and the anus or vulva, or an object and the anus, vulva, or penis of the victim, occurs upon penetration, however slight. Emission is not required.

5. "Sexual contact" means any touching, whether or not through the clothing or other covering, of the sexual or other intimate parts of the person, or the penile ejaculation or ejaculate or emission of urine or feces upon any part of the person, for the purpose of arousing or satisfying sexual or aggressive desires.

### **N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-03 (2009). GROSS SEXUAL IMPOSITION-- PENALTY**

1. A person who engages in a sexual act with another, or who causes another to engage in a sexual act, is guilty of an offense if:

a. That person compels the victim to submit by force or by threat of imminent death, serious bodily injury, or kidnapping, to be inflicted on any human being;

b. That person or someone with that person's knowledge has substantially impaired the victim's power to appraise or control the victim's conduct by administering or employing without the victim's knowledge intoxicants, a controlled substance as defined in chapter 19-03.1, or other means with intent to prevent resistance;

c. That person knows or has reasonable cause to believe that the victim is unaware that a sexual act is being committed upon him or her;

d. The victim is less than fifteen years old; or

e. That person knows or has reasonable cause to believe that the other person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders him or her incapable of understanding the nature of his or her conduct.

2. A person who engages in sexual contact with another, or who causes another to engage in sexual contact, is guilty of an offense if:

a. The victim is less than fifteen years old;

b. That person compels the victim to submit by force or by threat of imminent death, serious bodily injury, or kidnapping, to be inflicted on any human being; or

c. That person knows or has reasonable cause to believe that the victim is unaware that sexual contact is being committed on the victim.

3. a. An offense under this section is a class AA felony if in the course of the offense the actor inflicts serious bodily injury upon the victim, if the actor's conduct violates subdivision a of subsection 1, or if the actor's conduct violates subdivision d of subsection 1 and the actor was at least twenty-two years of age at the time of the offense. For any conviction of a class AA felony under subdivision a of subsection 1, the court shall impose a minimum sentence of twenty years' imprisonment, with probation supervision to follow the incarceration. The court may deviate from the mandatory sentence if the court finds that the sentence would impose a manifest injustice as defined in section 39-01-01 and the defendant has accepted responsibility for the crime or cooperated with law enforcement. However, a defendant convicted of a class AA felony under this section may not be sentenced to serve less than five years of incarceration.

b. Otherwise the offense is a class A felony.

4. If, as a result of injuries sustained during the course of an offense under this section, the victim dies, the offense is a class AA felony, for which the maximum penalty of life imprisonment without parole must be imposed.

## **N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-04 (2009). SEXUAL IMPOSITION**

A person who engages in a sexual act or sexual contact with another, or who causes another to engage in a sexual act or sexual contact, is guilty of a class B felony if the actor:

1. Compels the other person to submit by any threat or coercion that would render a person reasonably incapable of resisting; or

2. Engages in a sexual act or sexual contact with another, whether consensual or not, as part of an induction, initiation, ceremony, pledge, hazing, or qualification to become a member or an associate of any criminal street gang as defined in section 12.1-06.2-01.

## **N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-07 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

1. A person who knowingly has sexual contact with another person, or who causes another person to have sexual contact with that person, is guilty of an offense if:

a. That person knows or has reasonable cause to believe that the contact is offensive to the other person;

b. That person knows or has reasonable cause to believe that the other person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders that other person incapable of understanding the nature of that other person's conduct;

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

c. That person or someone with that person's knowledge has substantially impaired the victim's power to appraise or control the victim's conduct, by administering or employing without the victim's knowledge intoxicants, a controlled substance as defined in chapter 19-03.1, or other means for the purpose of preventing resistance;

d. The other person is in official custody or detained in a hospital, prison, or other institution and the actor has supervisory or disciplinary authority over that other person;

e. The other person is a minor, fifteen years of age or older, and the actor is the other person's parent, guardian, or is otherwise responsible for general supervision of the other person's welfare; or

f. The other person is a minor, fifteen years of age or older, and the actor is an adult.

2. The offense is a class C felony if the actor's conduct violates subdivision b, c, d, or e of subsection 1, or subdivision f of subsection 1 if the adult is at least twenty-two years of age, a class A misdemeanor if the actor's conduct violates subdivision f of subsection 1 if the adult is at least eighteen years of age and not twenty-two years of age or older, or a class B misdemeanor if the actor's conduct violates subdivision a of subsection 1.

### **N.D. CENT. CODE § 12.1-20-12 (2009). DEVIATE SEXUAL ACT**

A person who performs a deviate sexual act with the intent to arouse or gratify his sexual desire is guilty of a class A misdemeanor.

## **OHIO**

### **OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.02 (West 2009). RAPE; EVIDENCE; MARRIAGE OR COHABITATION NOT DEFENSES TO RAPE CHARGES**

(A)(1) No person shall engage in sexual conduct with another who is not the spouse of the offender or who is the spouse of the offender but is living separate and apart from the offender, when any of the following applies:

(a) For the purpose of preventing resistance, the offender substantially impairs the other person's judgment or control by administering any drug, intoxicant, or controlled substance to the other person surreptitiously or by force, threat of force, or deception.

(b) The other person is less than thirteen years of age, whether or not the offender knows the age of the other person.

(c) The other person's ability to resist or consent is substantially impaired because of a mental or physical condition or because of advanced age, and the offender knows or has

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

reasonable cause to believe that the other person's ability to resist or consent is substantially impaired because of a mental or physical condition or because of advanced age.

(2) No person shall engage in sexual conduct with another when the offender purposely compels the other person to submit by force or threat of force.

(B) Whoever violates this section is guilty of rape, a felony of the first degree. If the offender under division (A)(1)(a) of this section substantially impairs the other person's judgment or control by administering any controlled substance described in section 3719.41 of the Revised Code to the other person surreptitiously or by force, threat of force, or deception, the prison term imposed upon the offender shall be one of the prison terms prescribed for a felony of the first degree in section 2929.14 of the Revised Code that is not less than five years. Except as otherwise provided in this division, notwithstanding sections 2929.11 to 2929.14 of the Revised Code, an offender under division (A)(1)(b) of this section shall be sentenced to a prison term or term of life imprisonment pursuant to section 2971.03 of the Revised Code. If an offender is convicted of or pleads guilty to a violation of division (A)(1)(b) of this section, if the offender was less than sixteen years of age at the time the offender committed the violation of that division, and if the offender during or immediately after the commission of the offense did not cause serious physical harm to the victim, the victim was ten years of age or older at the time of the commission of the violation, and the offender has not previously been convicted of or pleaded guilty to a violation of this section or a substantially similar existing or former law of this state, another state, or the United States, the court shall not sentence the offender to a prison term or term of life imprisonment pursuant to section 2971.03 of the Revised Code, and instead the court shall sentence the offender as otherwise provided in this division. If an offender under division (A)(1)(b) of this section previously has been convicted of or pleaded guilty to violating division (A)(1)(b) of this section or to violating an existing or former law of this state, another state, or the United States that is substantially similar to division (A)(1)(b) of this section, if the offender during or immediately after the commission of the offense caused serious physical harm to the victim, or if the victim under division (A)(1)(b) of this section is less than ten years of age, in lieu of sentencing the offender to a prison term or term of life imprisonment pursuant to section 2971.03 of the Revised Code, the court may impose upon the offender a term of life without parole. If the court imposes a term of life without parole pursuant to this division, division (F) of section 2971.03 of the Revised Code applies, and the offender automatically is classified a tier III sex offender/child-victim offender, as described in that division.

(C) A victim need not prove physical resistance to the offender in prosecutions under this section.

(D) Evidence of specific instances of the victim's sexual activity, opinion evidence of the victim's sexual activity, and reputation evidence of the victim's sexual activity shall not be admitted under this section unless it involves evidence of the origin of semen, pregnancy, or disease, or the victim's past sexual activity with the offender, and only to the extent that the court finds that the evidence is material to a fact at issue in the case and that its inflammatory or prejudicial nature does not outweigh its probative value.

Evidence of specific instances of the defendant's sexual activity, opinion evidence of the defendant's sexual activity, and reputation evidence of the defendant's sexual activity shall not be admitted under this section unless it involves evidence of the origin of semen, pregnancy, or disease, the defendant's past sexual activity with the victim, or is admissible against the defendant under section 2945.59 of the Revised Code, and only to the extent that the court finds that the evidence is material to a fact at issue in the case and that its inflammatory or prejudicial nature does not outweigh its probative value.

(E) Prior to taking testimony or receiving evidence of any sexual activity of the victim or the defendant in a proceeding under this section, the court shall resolve the admissibility of the proposed evidence in a hearing in chambers, which shall be held at or before preliminary hearing and not less than three days before trial, or for good cause shown during the trial.

(F) Upon approval by the court, the victim may be represented by counsel in any hearing in chambers or other proceeding to resolve the admissibility of evidence. If the victim is indigent or otherwise is unable to obtain the services of counsel, the court, upon request, may appoint counsel to represent the victim without cost to the victim.

(G) It is not a defense to a charge under division (A)(2) of this section that the offender and the victim were married or were cohabiting at the time of the commission of the offense.

## **OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.03 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

(A) No person shall engage in sexual conduct with another, not the spouse of the offender, when any of the following apply:

(1) The offender knowingly coerces the other person to submit by any means that would prevent resistance by a person of ordinary resolution.

(2) The offender knows that the other person's ability to appraise the nature of or control the other person's own conduct is substantially impaired.

(3) The offender knows that the other person submits because the other person is unaware that the act is being committed.

(4) The offender knows that the other person submits because the other person mistakenly identifies the offender as the other person's spouse.

(5) The offender is the other person's natural or adoptive parent, or a stepparent, or guardian, custodian, or person in loco parentis of the other person.

(6) The other person is in custody of law or a patient in a hospital or other institution, and the offender has supervisory or disciplinary authority over the other person.

(7) The offender is a teacher, administrator, coach, or other person in authority employed by or serving in a school for which the state board of education prescribes minimum

standards pursuant to division (D) of section 3301.07 of the Revised Code, the other person is enrolled in or attends that school, and the offender is not enrolled in and does not attend that school.

(8) The other person is a minor, the offender is a teacher, administrator, coach, or other person in authority employed by or serving in an institution of higher education, and the other person is enrolled in or attends that institution.

(9) The other person is a minor, and the offender is the other person's athletic or other type of coach, is the other person's instructor, is the leader of a scouting troop of which the other person is a member, or is a person with temporary or occasional disciplinary control over the other person.

(10) The offender is a mental health professional, the other person is a mental health client or patient of the offender, and the offender induces the other person to submit by falsely representing to the other person that the sexual conduct is necessary for mental health treatment purposes.

(11) The other person is confined in a detention facility, and the offender is an employee of that detention facility.

(12) The other person is a minor, the offender is a cleric, and the other person is a member of, or attends, the church or congregation served by the cleric.

(13) The other person is a minor, the offender is a peace officer, and the offender is more than two years older than the other person.

(B) Whoever violates this section is guilty of sexual battery. Except as otherwise provided in this division, sexual battery is a felony of the third degree. If the other person is less than thirteen years of age, sexual battery is a felony of the second degree, and the court shall impose upon the offender a mandatory prison term equal to one of the prison terms prescribed in section 2929.14 of the Revised Code for a felony of the second degree.

(C) As used in this section:

(1) "Cleric" has the same meaning as in section 2317.02 of the Revised Code.

(2) "Detention facility" has the same meaning as in section 2921.01 of the Revised Code.

(3) "Institution of higher education" means a state institution of higher education defined in section 3345.011 of the Revised Code, a private nonprofit college or university located in this state that possesses a certificate of authorization issued by the Ohio board of regents pursuant to Chapter 1713. of the Revised Code, or a school certified under Chapter 3332. of the Revised Code.

(4) "Peace officer" has the same meaning as in section 2935.01 of the Revised Code.

## OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.05 (West 2009). GROSS SEXUAL IMPOSITION

(A) No person shall have sexual contact with another, not the spouse of the offender; cause another, not the spouse of the offender, to have sexual contact with the offender; or cause two or more other persons to have sexual contact when any of the following applies:

(1) The offender purposely compels the other person, or one of the other persons, to submit by force or threat of force.

(2) For the purpose of preventing resistance, the offender substantially impairs the judgment or control of the other person or of one of the other persons by administering any drug, intoxicant, or controlled substance to the other person surreptitiously or by force, threat of force, or deception.

(3) The offender knows that the judgment or control of the other person or of one of the other persons is substantially impaired as a result of the influence of any drug or intoxicant administered to the other person with the other person's consent for the purpose of any kind of medical or dental examination, treatment, or surgery.

(4) The other person, or one of the other persons, is less than thirteen years of age, whether or not the offender knows the age of that person.

(5) The ability of the other person to resist or consent or the ability of one of the other persons to resist or consent is substantially impaired because of a mental or physical condition or because of advanced age, and the offender knows or has reasonable cause to believe that the ability to resist or consent of the other person or of one of the other persons is substantially impaired because of a mental or physical condition or because of advanced age.

(B) No person shall knowingly touch the genitalia of another, when the touching is not through clothing, the other person is less than twelve years of age, whether or not the offender knows the age of that person, and the touching is done with an intent to abuse, humiliate, harass, degrade, or arouse or gratify the sexual desire of any person.

(C) Whoever violates this section is guilty of gross sexual imposition.

(1) Except as otherwise provided in this section, gross sexual imposition committed in violation of division (A)(1), (2), (3), or (5) of this section is a felony of the fourth degree. If the offender under division (A)(2) of this section substantially impairs the judgment or control of the other person or one of the other persons by administering any controlled substance described in [section 3719.41 of the Revised Code](#) to the person surreptitiously or by force, threat of force, or deception, gross sexual imposition committed in violation of division (A)(2) of this section is a felony of the third degree.

(2) Gross sexual imposition committed in violation of division (A)(4) or (B) of this section is a felony of the third degree. Except as otherwise provided in this division, for gross sexual imposition committed in violation of division (A)(4) or (B) of this section there is a



presumption that a prison term shall be imposed for the offense. The court shall impose on an offender convicted of gross sexual imposition in violation of division (A)(4) or (B) of this section a mandatory prison term equal to one of the prison terms prescribed in section 2929.14 of the Revised Code for a felony of the third degree if either of the following applies:

(a) Evidence other than the testimony of the victim was admitted in the case corroborating the violation;

(b) The offender previously was convicted of or pleaded guilty to a violation of this section, rape, the former offense of felonious sexual penetration, or sexual battery, and the victim of the previous offense was less than thirteen years of age.

(D) A victim need not prove physical resistance to the offender in prosecutions under this section.

(E) Evidence of specific instances of the victim's sexual activity, opinion evidence of the victim's sexual activity, and reputation evidence of the victim's sexual activity shall not be admitted under this section unless it involves evidence of the origin of semen, pregnancy, or disease, or the victim's past sexual activity with the offender, and only to the extent that the court finds that the evidence is material to a fact at issue in the case and that its inflammatory or prejudicial nature does not outweigh its probative value.

Evidence of specific instances of the defendant's sexual activity, opinion evidence of the defendant's sexual activity, and reputation evidence of the defendant's sexual activity shall not be admitted under this section unless it involves evidence of the origin of semen, pregnancy, or disease, the defendant's past sexual activity with the victim, or is admissible against the defendant under section 2945.59 of the Revised Code, and only to the extent that the court finds that the evidence is material to a fact at issue in the case and that its inflammatory or prejudicial nature does not outweigh its probative value.

(F) Prior to taking testimony or receiving evidence of any sexual activity of the victim or the defendant in a proceeding under this section, the court shall resolve the admissibility of the proposed evidence in a hearing in chambers, which shall be held at or before preliminary hearing and not less than three days before trial, or for good cause shown during the trial.

(G) Upon approval by the court, the victim may be represented by counsel in any hearing in chambers or other proceeding to resolve the admissibility of evidence. If the victim is indigent or otherwise is unable to obtain the services of counsel, the court, upon request, may appoint counsel to represent the victim without cost to the victim.

## **OHIO REV. CODE ANN. § 2907.06 (West 2009). SEXUAL IMPOSITION**

(A) No person shall have sexual contact with another, not the spouse of the offender; cause another, not the spouse of the offender, to have sexual contact with the offender; or cause two or more other persons to have sexual contact when any of the following applies:

(1) The offender knows that the sexual contact is offensive to the other person, or one of the other persons, or is reckless in that regard.

(2) The offender knows that the other person's, or one of the other person's, ability to appraise the nature of or control the offender's or touching person's conduct is substantially impaired.

(3) The offender knows that the other person, or one of the other persons, submits because of being unaware of the sexual contact.

(4) The other person, or one of the other persons, is thirteen years of age or older but less than sixteen years of age, whether or not the offender knows the age of such person, and the offender is at least eighteen years of age and four or more years older than such other person.

(5) The offender is a mental health professional, the other person or one of the other persons is a mental health client or patient of the offender, and the offender induces the other person who is the client or patient to submit by falsely representing to the other person who is the client or patient that the sexual contact is necessary for mental health treatment purposes.

(B) No person shall be convicted of a violation of this section solely upon the victim's testimony unsupported by other evidence.

(C) Whoever violates this section is guilty of sexual imposition, a misdemeanor of the third degree. If the offender previously has been convicted of a violation of this section or of section 2907.02, 2907.03, 2907.04, 2907.05, or 2907.12 of the Revised Code, a violation of this section is a misdemeanor of the first degree.

## OKLAHOMA

### OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1111 (West 2009). RAPE DEFINED

A. Rape is an act of sexual intercourse involving vaginal or anal penetration accomplished with a male or female who is not the spouse of the perpetrator and who may be of the same or the opposite sex as the perpetrator under any of the following circumstances:

1. Where the victim is under sixteen (16) years of age;
2. Where the victim is incapable through mental illness or any other unsoundness of mind, whether temporary or permanent, of giving legal consent;

3. Where force or violence is used or threatened, accompanied by apparent power of execution to the victim or to another person;
  4. Where the victim is intoxicated by a narcotic or anesthetic agent, administered by or with the privity of the accused as a means of forcing the victim to submit;
  5. Where the victim is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act and this fact is known to the accused;
  6. Where the victim submits to sexual intercourse under the belief that the person committing the act is a spouse, and this belief is induced by artifice, pretense, or concealment practiced by the accused or by the accused in collusion with the spouse with intent to induce that belief. In all cases of collusion between the accused and the spouse to accomplish such act, both the spouse and the accused, upon conviction, shall be deemed guilty of rape;
  7. Where the victim is under the legal custody or supervision of a state agency, a federal agency, a county, a municipality or a political subdivision and engages in sexual intercourse with a state, federal, county, municipal or political subdivision employee or an employee of a contractor of the state, the federal government, a county, a municipality or a political subdivision that exercises authority over the victim; or
  8. Where the victim is at least sixteen (16) years of age and is less than twenty (20) years of age and is a student, or under the legal custody or supervision of any public or private elementary or secondary school, junior high or high school, or public vocational school, and engages in sexual intercourse with a person who is eighteen (18) years of age or older and is an employee of the same school system.
- B. Rape is an act of sexual intercourse accomplished with a male or female who is the spouse of the perpetrator if force or violence is used or threatened, accompanied by apparent power of execution to the victim or to another person.

## **OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1111.1 (West 2009). RAPE BY INSTRUMENTATION**

Rape by instrumentation is an act within or without the bonds of matrimony in which any inanimate object or any part of the human body, not amounting to sexual intercourse is used in the carnal knowledge of another person without his or her consent and penetration of the anus or vagina occurs to that person. Provided, further, that at least one of the circumstances specified in Section 1111 of this title has been met; further, where the victim is at least sixteen (16) years of age and is less than twenty (20) years of age and is a student, or under the legal custody or supervision of any public or private elementary or secondary school, junior high or high school, or public vocational school, and engages in conduct prohibited by this section of law with a person who is eighteen (18) years of age or older and is an employee of the same school system, or where the victim is under the legal custody or supervision of a state or federal agency, county, municipal or a political

subdivision and engages in conduct prohibited by this section of law with a federal, state, county, municipal or political subdivision employee or an employee of a contractor of the state, the federal government, a county, a municipality or a political subdivision that exercises authority over the victim, consent shall not be an element of the crime. Except for persons sentenced to life or life without parole, any person sentenced to imprisonment for two (2) years or more for a violation of this section shall be required to serve a term of post-imprisonment supervision pursuant to subparagraph f of paragraph 1 of subsection A of Section 991a of Title 22 of the Oklahoma Statutes under conditions determined by the Department of Corrections. The jury shall be advised that the mandatory post-imprisonment supervision shall be in addition to the actual imprisonment.

### **OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1112 (West 2009). AGE LIMITATIONS ON CONVICTION FOR RAPE**

No person can be convicted of rape or rape by instrumentation on account of an act of sexual intercourse with anyone over the age of fourteen (14) years, with his or her consent, unless such person was over the age of eighteen (18) years at the time of such act.

### **OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1113 (West 2009). SLIGHT PENETRATION IS SUFFICIENT TO COMPLETE CRIME**

The essential guilt of rape or rape by instrumentation, except with the consent of a male or female over fourteen (14) years of age, consists in the outrage to the person and feelings of the victim. Any sexual penetration, however slight, is sufficient to complete the crime.

### **OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1114 (West 2009). RAPE IN FIRST DEGREE-- SECOND DEGREE**

A. Rape in the first degree shall include:

1. rape committed by a person over eighteen (18) years of age upon a person under fourteen (14) years of age; or
2. rape committed upon a person incapable through mental illness or any unsoundness of mind of giving legal consent regardless of the age of the person committing the crime; or
3. rape accomplished where the victim is intoxicated by a narcotic or anesthetic agent, administered by or with the privity of the accused as a means of forcing the victim to submit; or
4. rape accomplished where the victim is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act and this fact is known to the accused; or

5. rape accomplished with any person by means of force, violence, or threats of force or violence accompanied by apparent power of execution regardless of the age of the person committing the crime; or

6. rape by instrumentation resulting in bodily harm is rape by instrumentation in the first degree regardless of the age of the person committing the crime; or

7. rape by instrumentation committed upon a person under fourteen (14) years of age.

B. In all other cases, rape or rape by instrumentation is rape in the second degree.

**OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1116 (West 2009). RAPE IN SECOND DEGREE A FELONY**

Rape in the second degree is a felony punishable by imprisonment in the State Penitentiary not less than one (1) year nor more than fifteen (15) years.

**OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1117 (West 2009). COMPELLING WOMAN TO MARRY**

Any person who takes any woman against her will, and by force, menace or duress, compels her to marry him or to marry any other person, shall be guilty of a felony punishable by imprisonment in the State Penitentiary not less than ten (10) years.

**OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1118 (West 2009). INTENT TO COMPEL WOMAN TO MARRY**

Any person who takes any woman unlawfully against her will, with the intent to compel her by force, menace or duress to marry him, or to marry any other person, shall be guilty of a felony punishable by imprisonment in the State Penitentiary not exceeding ten (10) years.

**OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1120 (West 2009). SEDUCTION UNDER PROMISE OF MARRIAGE**

Any person who, under promise of marriage, seduces and has illicit connection with any unmarried female of previous chaste character shall be guilty of a felony punishable by imprisonment in the State Penitentiary not exceeding five (5) years, or by imprisonment in a county jail not exceeding one (1) year, or by a fine not exceeding One Thousand Dollars (\$1,000.00), or by both such fine and imprisonment.

## **OKLA. STAT. ANN. tit. 21, § 1121 (West 2009). SUBSEQUENT MARRIAGE AS A DEFENSE**

The subsequent marriage of the parties is a defense to a prosecution for a violation of the last section.

## **OREGON**

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.305 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

Amended

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.315 (West 2009). CAPABILITY TO CONSENT; LACK OF RESISTANCE**

(1) A person is considered incapable of consenting to a sexual act if the person is:

- (a) Under 18 years of age;
- (b) Mentally defective;
- (c) Mentally incapacitated; or
- (d) Physically helpless.

(2) A lack of verbal or physical resistance does not, by itself, constitute consent but may be considered by the trier of fact along with all other relevant evidence.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.325 (West 2009). KNOWLEDGE OF VICTIM'S AGE**

(1) In any prosecution under ORS 163.355 to 163.445 in which the criminality of conduct depends on a child's being under the age of 16, it is no defense that the defendant did not know the child's age or that the defendant reasonably believed the child to be older than the age of 16.

(2) When criminality depends on the child's being under a specified age other than 16, it is an affirmative defense for the defendant to prove that the defendant reasonably believed the child to be above the specified age at the time of the alleged offense.

(3) In any prosecution under ORS 163.355 to 163.445 in which the victim's lack of consent is based solely upon the incapacity of the victim to consent because the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless, it is an affirmative defense for the defendant to prove that at the time of the alleged offense the defendant did not know of the facts or conditions responsible for the victim's incapacity to consent.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.345 (West 2009). AGE; DEFENSE**

(1) In any prosecution under ORS 163.355, 163.365, 163.385, 163.395, 163.415, 163.425, 163.427 or 163.435 in which the victim's lack of consent was due solely to incapacity to consent by reason of being less than a specified age, it is a defense that the actor was less than three years older than the victim at the time of the alleged offense.

(2) In any prosecution under ORS 163.408, when the object used to commit the unlawful sexual penetration was the hand or any part thereof of the actor and in which the victim's lack of consent was due solely to incapacity to consent by reason of being less than a specified age, it is a defense that the actor was less than three years older than the victim at the time of the alleged offense.

(3) In any prosecution under ORS 163.445 in which the victim's lack of consent was due solely to incapacity to consent by reason of being less than a specified age, it is a defense that the actor was less than three years older than the victim at the time of the alleged offense if the victim was at least 15 years of age at the time of the alleged offense.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.355 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(1) A person commits the crime of rape in the third degree if the person has sexual intercourse with another person under 16 years of age.

(2) Rape in the third degree is a Class C felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.365 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(1) A person who has sexual intercourse with another person commits the crime of rape in the second degree if the other person is under 14 years of age.

(2) Rape in the second degree is a Class B felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.375 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) A person who has sexual intercourse with another person commits the crime of rape in the first degree if:

(a) The victim is subjected to forcible compulsion by the person;

(b) The victim is under 12 years of age;

(c) The victim is under 16 years of age and is the person's sibling, of the whole or half blood, the person's child or the person's spouse's child; or

(d) The victim is incapable of consent by reason of mental defect, mental incapacitation or physical helplessness.

(2) Rape in the first degree is a Class A felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.385 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(1) A person commits the crime of sodomy in the third degree if the person engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person under 16 years of age or causes that person to engage in deviate sexual intercourse.

(2) Sodomy in the third degree is a Class C felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.395 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(1) A person who engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person or causes another to engage in deviate sexual intercourse commits the crime of sodomy in the second degree if the victim is under 14 years of age.

(2) Sodomy in the second degree is a Class B felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.405 (West 2009). SODOMY IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) A person who engages in deviate sexual intercourse with another person or causes another to engage in deviate sexual intercourse commits the crime of sodomy in the first degree if:

(a) The victim is subjected to forcible compulsion by the actor;

(b) The victim is under 12 years of age;



(c) The victim is under 16 years of age and is the actor's brother or sister, of the whole or half blood, the son or daughter of the actor or the son or daughter of the actor's spouse; or

(d) The victim is incapable of consent by reason of mental defect, mental incapacitation or physical helplessness.

(2) Sodomy in the first degree is a Class A felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.408 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL PENETRATION IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(1) Except as permitted under ORS 163.412, a person commits the crime of unlawful sexual penetration in the second degree if the person penetrates the vagina, anus or penis of another with any object other than the penis or mouth of the actor and the victim is under 14 years of age.

(2) Unlawful sexual penetration in the second degree is a Class B felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.411 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL PENETRATION IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) Except as permitted under ORS 163.412, a person commits the crime of unlawful sexual penetration in the first degree if the person penetrates the vagina, anus or penis of another with any object other than the penis or mouth of the actor and:

(a) The victim is subjected to forcible compulsion;

(b) The victim is under 12 years of age; or

(c) The victim is incapable of consent by reason of mental defect, mental incapacitation or physical helplessness.

(2) Unlawful sexual penetration in the first degree is a Class A felony.

### **OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.412 (West 2009). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL PENETRATION; EXCEPTIONS**

Nothing in ORS 163.408, 163.411 or 163.452 prohibits a penetration described in those sections when:

(1) The penetration is part of a medically recognized treatment or diagnostic procedure; or

(2) The penetration is accomplished by a peace officer or a corrections officer acting in official capacity, or by medical personnel at the request of such an officer, in order to search for weapons, contraband or evidence of crime.

**OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.415 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

Amended

**OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.425 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

Amended

**OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.427 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) A person commits the crime of sexual abuse in the first degree when that person:

(a) Subjects another person to sexual contact and:

(A) The victim is less than 14 years of age;

(B) The victim is subjected to forcible compulsion by the actor; or

(C) The victim is incapable of consent by reason of being mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless; or

(b) Intentionally causes a person under 18 years of age to touch or contact the mouth, anus or sex organs of an animal for the purpose of arousing or gratifying the sexual desire of a person.

(2) Sexual abuse in the first degree is a Class B felony.

**OR. REV. STAT. ANN. §163.445 (West 2009). SEXUAL MISCONDUCT**

(1) A person commits the crime of sexual misconduct if the person engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with an unmarried person under 18 years of age.

(2) Sexual misconduct is a Class C misdemeanor.

## PENNSYLVANIA

### PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3101 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS

Subject to additional definitions contained in subsequent provisions of this chapter which are applicable to specific provisions of this chapter, the following words and phrases when used in this chapter shall have, unless the context clearly indicates otherwise, the meanings given to them in this section:

**“Complainant.”** An alleged victim of a crime under this chapter.

**“Deviate sexual intercourse.”** Sexual intercourse per os or per anus between human beings and any form of sexual intercourse with an animal. The term also includes penetration, however slight, of the genitals or anus of another person with a foreign object for any purpose other than good faith medical, hygienic or law enforcement procedures.

**“Forcible compulsion.”** Compulsion by use of physical, intellectual, moral, emotional or psychological force, either express or implied. The term includes, but is not limited to, compulsion resulting in another person's death, whether the death occurred before, during or after sexual intercourse.

**“Foreign object.”** Includes any physical object not a part of the actor's body.

**“Indecent contact.”** Any touching of the sexual or other intimate parts of the person for the purpose of arousing or gratifying sexual desire, in either person.

**“Serious bodily injury.”** As defined in section 2301(relating to definitions).

**“Sexual intercourse.”** In addition to its ordinary meaning, includes intercourse per os or per anus, with some penetration however slight; emission is not required.

### PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3107 (West 2009). RESISTANCE NOT REQUIRED

The alleged victim need not resist the actor in prosecutions under this chapter: Provided, however, That nothing in this section shall be construed to prohibit a defendant from introducing evidence that the alleged victim consented to the conduct in question.

## **PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3121 (West 2009). RAPE**

**(a) Offense defined.**--A person commits a felony of the first degree when the person engages in sexual intercourse with a complainant:

(1) By forcible compulsion.

(2) By threat of forcible compulsion that would prevent resistance by a person of reasonable resolution.

(3) Who is unconscious or where the person knows that the complainant is unaware that the sexual intercourse is occurring.

(4) Where the person has substantially impaired the complainant's power to appraise or control his or her conduct by administering or employing, without the knowledge of the complainant, drugs, intoxicants or other means for the purpose of preventing resistance.

(5) Who suffers from a mental disability which renders the complainant incapable of consent.

(6) Deleted by 2002, Dec. 9, P.L. 1350, No. 162, § 2, effective in 60 days.

**(b) Additional penalties.**--In addition to the penalty provided for by subsection (a), a person may be sentenced to an additional term not to exceed ten years' confinement and an additional amount not to exceed \$100,000 where the person engages in sexual intercourse with a complainant and has substantially impaired the complainant's power to appraise or control his or her conduct by administering or employing, without the knowledge of the complainant, any substance for the purpose of preventing resistance through the inducement of euphoria, memory loss and any other effect of this substance.

**(c) Rape of a child.**--A person commits the offense of rape of a child, a felony of the first degree, when the person engages in sexual intercourse with a complainant who is less than 13 years of age.

**(d) Rape of a child with serious bodily injury.**--A person commits the offense of rape of a child resulting in serious bodily injury, a felony of the first degree, when the person violates this section and the complainant is under 13 years of age and suffers serious bodily injury in the course of the offense.

**(e) Sentences.**--Notwithstanding the provisions of section 1103 (relating to sentence of imprisonment for felony), a person convicted of an offense under:

(1) Subsection (c) shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment which shall be fixed by the court at not more than 40 years.

(2) Subsection (d) shall be sentenced up to a maximum term of life imprisonment.

## **PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3122.1 (West 2009). STATUTORY SEXUAL ASSAULT**

Except as provided in section 3121 (relating to rape), a person commits a felony of the second degree when that person engages in sexual intercourse with a complainant under the age of 16 years and that person is four or more years older than the complainant and the complainant and the person are not married to each other.

## **PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3123 (West 2009). INVOLUNTARY DEVIATE SEXUAL INTERCOURSE**

**(a) Offense defined.**--A person commits a felony of the first degree when the person engages in deviate sexual intercourse with a complainant:

(1) by forcible compulsion;

(2) by threat of forcible compulsion that would prevent resistance by a person of reasonable resolution;

(3) who is unconscious or where the person knows that the complainant is unaware that the sexual intercourse is occurring;

(4) where the person has substantially impaired the complainant's power to appraise or control his or her conduct by administering or employing, without the knowledge of the complainant, drugs, intoxicants or other means for the purpose of preventing resistance;

(5) who suffers from a mental disability which renders him or her incapable of consent; or

(6) Deleted by 2002, Dec. 9, P.L. 1350, No. 162, § 2, effective in 60 days.

(7) who is less than 16 years of age and the person is four or more years older than the complainant and the complainant and person are not married to each other.

**(b) Involuntary deviate sexual intercourse with a child.**--A person commits involuntary deviate sexual intercourse with a child, a felony of the first degree, when the person engages in deviate sexual intercourse with a complainant who is less than 13 years of age.

**(c) Involuntary deviate sexual intercourse with a child with serious bodily injury.**--A person commits an offense under this section with a child resulting in serious bodily injury, a felony of the first degree, when the person violates this section and the complainant is less than 13 years of age and the complainant suffers serious bodily injury in the course of the offense.

**(d) Sentences.**--Notwithstanding the provisions of section 1103 (relating to sentence of imprisonment for felony), a person convicted of an offense under:

(1) Subsection (b) shall be sentenced to a term of imprisonment which shall be fixed by the court at not more than 40 years.

(2) Subsection (c) shall be sentenced up to a maximum term of life imprisonment.

**(e) Definition.**--As used in this section, the term “forcible compulsion” includes, but is not limited to, compulsion resulting in another person's death, whether the death occurred before, during or after the sexual intercourse.

## **PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3124.1 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

Except as provided in section 3121 (relating to rape) or 3123 (relating to involuntary deviate sexual intercourse), a person commits a felony of the second degree when that person engages in sexual intercourse or deviate sexual intercourse with a complainant without the complainant's consent.

## **PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3125 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED INDECENT ASSAULT**

**(a) Offenses defined.**--Except as provided in sections 3121 (relating to rape), 3122.1 (relating to statutory sexual assault), 3123 (relating to involuntary deviate sexual intercourse) and 3124.1 (relating to sexual assault), a person who engages in penetration, however slight, of the genitals or anus of a complainant with a part of the person's body for any purpose other than good faith medical, hygienic or law enforcement procedures commits aggravated indecent assault if:

(1) the person does so without the complainant's consent;

(2) the person does so by forcible compulsion;

(3) the person does so by threat of forcible compulsion that would prevent resistance by a person of reasonable resolution;

(4) the complainant is unconscious or the person knows that the complainant is unaware that the penetration is occurring;

(5) the person has substantially impaired the complainant's power to appraise or control his or her conduct by administering or employing, without the knowledge of the complainant, drugs, intoxicants or other means for the purpose of preventing resistance;

(6) the complainant suffers from a mental disability which renders him or her incapable of consent;

(7) the complainant is less than 13 years of age; or

(8) the complainant is less than 16 years of age and the person is four or more years older than the complainant and the complainant and the person are not married to each other.

**(b) Aggravated indecent assault of a child.**--A person commits aggravated indecent assault of a child when the person violates subsection (a)(1), (2), (3), (4), (5) or (6) and the complainant is less than 13 years of age.

**(c) Grading and sentences.**--

(1) An offense under subsection (a) is a felony of the second degree.

(2) An offense under subsection (b) is a felony of the first degree.

## **PA. CONS. STAT. ANN. 18 § 3126 (West 2009). INDECENT ASSAULT**

**(a) Offense defined.**--A person is guilty of indecent assault if the person has indecent contact with the complainant, causes the complainant to have indecent contact with the person or intentionally causes the complainant to come into contact with seminal fluid, urine or feces for the purpose of arousing sexual desire in the person or the complainant and:

(1) the person does so without the complainant's consent;

(2) the person does so by forcible compulsion;

(3) the person does so by threat of forcible compulsion that would prevent resistance by a person of reasonable resolution;

(4) the complainant is unconscious or the person knows that the complainant is unaware that the indecent contact is occurring;

(5) the person has substantially impaired the complainant's power to appraise or control his or her conduct by administering or employing, without the knowledge of the complainant, drugs, intoxicants or other means for the purpose of preventing resistance;

(6) the complainant suffers from a mental disability which renders the complainant incapable of consent;

(7) the complainant is less than 13 years of age; or

(8) the complainant is less than 16 years of age and the person is four or more years older than the complainant and the complainant and the person are not married to each other.

**(b) Grading.**--Indecent assault shall be graded as follows:

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

- (1) An offense under subsection (a)(1) or (8) is a misdemeanor of the second degree.
- (2) An offense under subsection (a)(2), (3), (4), (5) or (6) is a misdemeanor of the first degree.
- (3) An offense under subsection (a)(7) is a misdemeanor of the first degree unless any of the following apply, in which case it is a felony of the third degree:
  - (i) It is a second or subsequent offense.
  - (ii) There has been a course of conduct of indecent assault by the person.
  - (iii) The indecent assault was committed by touching the complainant's sexual or intimate parts with sexual or intimate parts of the person.
  - (iv) The indecent assault is committed by touching the person's sexual or intimate parts with the complainant's sexual or intimate parts.

## **RHODE ISLAND**

### **R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-1 (2009). DEFINITIONS**

The following words and phrases, when used in this chapter, have the following meanings:

- (1) “Accused” means a person accused of a sexual assault.
- (2) “Force or coercion” means when the accused does any of the following:
  - (i) Uses or threatens to use a weapon, or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the victim to reasonably believe it to be a weapon.
  - (ii) Overcomes the victim through the application of physical force or physical violence.
  - (iii) Coerces the victim to submit by threatening to use force or violence on the victim and the victim reasonably believes that the accused has the present ability to execute these threats.
  - (iv) Coerces the victim to submit by threatening to at some time in the future murder, inflict serious bodily injury upon or kidnap the victim or any other person and the victim reasonably believes that the accused has the ability to execute this threat.
- (3) “Intimate parts” means the genital or anal areas, groin, inner thigh, or buttock of any person or the breast of a female.



(4) “Mentally disabled” means a person who has a mental impairment which renders that person incapable of appraising the nature of the act.

(5) “Mentally incapacitated” means a person who is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling his or her conduct due to the influence of a narcotic, anesthetic, or other substance administered to that person without his or her consent, or who is mentally unable to communicate unwillingness to engage in the act.

(6) “Physically helpless” means a person who is unconscious, asleep, or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

(7) “Sexual contact” means the intentional touching of the victim's or accused's intimate parts, clothed or unclothed, if that intentional touching can be reasonably construed as intended by the accused to be for the purpose of sexual arousal, gratification, or assault.

(8) “Sexual penetration” means sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, and anal intercourse, or any other intrusion, however slight, by any part of a person's body or by any object into the genital or anal openings of another person's body, or the victim's own body upon the accused's instruction, but emission of semen is not required.

(9) “Spouse” means a person married to the accused at the time of the alleged sexual assault, except that such persons shall not be considered the spouse if the couple are living apart and a decision for divorce has been granted, whether or not a final decree has been entered.

(10) “Victim” means the person alleging to have been subjected to sexual assault.

### **R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-2 (2009). FIRST DEGREE SEXUAL ASSAULT**

A person is guilty of first degree sexual assault if he or she engages in sexual penetration with another person, and if any of the following circumstances exist:

(1) The accused, not being the spouse, knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapacitated, mentally disabled, or physically helpless.

(2) The accused uses force or coercion.

(3) The accused, through concealment or by the element of surprise, is able to overcome the victim.

(4) The accused engages in the medical treatment or examination of the victim for the purpose of sexual arousal, gratification, or stimulation.

### **R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-3.2 (2009). NECESSITY OF COMPLAINT FROM VICTIM**

No person shall be charged under § 11-37-3.1 unless and until the police department investigating the incident obtains from the victim a signed complaint against the person alleging a violation of § 11-37-3.1.

### **R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-4 (2009). SECOND DEGREE SEXUAL ASSAULT**

A person is guilty of a second degree sexual assault if he or she engages in sexual contact with another person and if any of the following circumstances exist:

- (1) The accused knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally incapacitated, mentally disabled or physically helpless.
- (2) The accused uses force or coercion.
- (3) The accused engages in the medical treatment or examination of the victim for the purpose of sexual arousal, gratification or stimulation.

### **R.I. GEN. LAWS § 11-37-6 (2009). THIRD DEGREE SEXUAL ASSAULT**

A person is guilty of third degree sexual assault if he or she is over the age of eighteen (18) years and engaged in sexual penetration with another person over the age of fourteen (14) years and under the age of consent, sixteen (16) years of age.

## **SOUTH CAROLINA**

### **S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-615 (2009). SPOUSAL SEXUAL BATTERY**

(A) Sexual battery, as defined in Section 16-3-651(h), when accomplished through use of aggravated force, defined as the use or the threat of use of a weapon or the use or threat of use of physical force or physical violence of a high and aggravated nature, by one spouse against the other spouse if they are living together, constitutes the felony of spousal sexual battery and, upon conviction, a person must be imprisoned not more than ten years.

(B) The offending spouse's conduct must be reported to appropriate law enforcement authorities within thirty days in order for that spouse to be prosecuted for this offense.

(C) The provisions of Section 16-3-659.1 apply to any trial brought under this section.

(D) This section is not applicable to a purported marriage entered into by a male under the age of sixteen or a female under the age of fourteen.

**S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-651 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT:  
DEFINITIONS.**

For the purposes of §§ 16-3-651 to 16-3-659.1:

- (a) “Actor” means a person accused of criminal sexual conduct.
- (b) “Aggravated coercion” means that the actor threatens to use force or violence of a high and aggravated nature to overcome the victim or another person, if the victim reasonably believes that the actor has the present ability to carry out the threat, or threatens to retaliate in the future by the infliction of physical harm, kidnapping or extortion, under circumstances of aggravation, against the victim or any other person.
- (c) “Aggravated force” means that the actor uses physical force or physical violence of a high and aggravated nature to overcome the victim or includes the threat of the use of a deadly weapon.
- (d) “Intimate parts” includes the primary genital area, anus, groin, inner thighs, or buttocks of a male or female human being and the breasts of a female human being.
- (e) “Mentally defective” means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders the person temporarily or permanently incapable of appraising the nature of his or her conduct.
- (f) “Mentally incapacitated” means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling his or her conduct whether this condition is produced by illness, defect, the influence of a substance or from some other cause.
- (g) “Physically helpless” means that a person is unconscious, asleep, or for any other reason physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.
- (h) “Sexual battery” means sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anal intercourse, or any intrusion, however slight, of any part of a person's body or of any object into the genital or anal openings of another person's body, except when such intrusion is accomplished for medically recognized treatment or diagnostic purposes.
- (i) “Victim” means the person alleging to have been subjected to criminal sexual conduct.

**S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-652 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE FIRST  
DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the first degree if the actor engages in sexual battery with the victim and if any one or more of the following circumstances are proven:

- (a) The actor uses aggravated force to accomplish sexual battery.
  - (b) The victim submits to sexual battery by the actor under circumstances where the victim is also the victim of forcible confinement, kidnapping, robbery, extortion, burglary, housebreaking, or any other similar offense or act.
  - (c) The actor causes the victim, without the victim's consent, to become mentally incapacitated or physically helpless by administering, distributing, dispensing, delivering, or causing to be administered, distributed, dispensed, or delivered a controlled substance, a controlled substance analogue, or any intoxicating substance.
- (2) Criminal sexual conduct in the first degree is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than thirty years, according to the discretion of the court.

### **S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-653 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

- (1) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the second degree if the actor uses aggravated coercion to accomplish sexual battery.
- (2) Criminal sexual conduct in the second degree is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than twenty years according to the discretion of the court.

### **S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-654 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

- (1) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the third degree if the actor engages in sexual battery with the victim and if any one or more of the following circumstances are proven:
- (a) The actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the sexual battery in the absence of aggravating circumstances.
  - (b) The actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless and aggravated force or aggravated coercion was not used to accomplish sexual battery.
- (2) Criminal sexual conduct in the third degree is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than ten years, according to the discretion of the court.

**S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-656 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT: ASSAULTS WITH INTENT TO COMMIT**

Assault with intent to commit criminal sexual conduct described in the above sections shall be punishable as if the criminal sexual conduct was committed.

**S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-657 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT: TESTIMONY OF VICTIM NEED NOT BE CORROBORATED**

The testimony of the victim need not be corroborated in prosecutions under §§ 16-3-652 through 16-3-658.

**S.C. CODE ANN. § 16-3-658 (2009). CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT: WHERE VICTIM IS SPOUSE**

A person cannot be guilty of criminal sexual conduct under Sections 16-3-651 through 16-3-659.1 if the victim is the legal spouse unless the couple is living apart and the offending spouse's conduct constitutes criminal sexual conduct in the first degree or second degree as defined by Sections 16-3-652 and 16-3-653.

The offending spouse's conduct must be reported to appropriate law enforcement authorities within thirty days in order for a person to be prosecuted for these offenses.

This section is not applicable to a purported marriage entered into by a male under the age of sixteen or a female under the age of fourteen.

## **SOUTH DAKOTA**

**S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-1 (2009). RAPE DEFINED--DEGREES--FELONY**

Rape is an act of sexual penetration accomplished with any person under any of the following circumstances:

(1) If the victim is less than thirteen years of age; or

(2) Through the use of force, coercion, or threats of immediate and great bodily harm against the victim or other persons within the victim's presence, accompanied by apparent power of execution; or

(3) If the victim is incapable, because of physical or mental incapacity, of giving consent to such act; or

(4) If the victim is incapable of giving consent because of any intoxicating, narcotic, or anesthetic agent or hypnosis; or

(5) If the victim is thirteen years of age, but less than sixteen years of age, and the perpetrator is at least three years older than the victim.

A violation of subdivision (1) of this section is rape in the first degree, which is a Class C felony. A violation of subdivision (2) of this section is rape in the second degree which is a Class 1 felony. A violation of subdivision (3) or (4) of this section is rape in the third degree, which is a Class 2 felony. A violation of subdivision (5) of this section is rape in the fourth degree, which is a Class 3 felony. Notwithstanding § 23A-42-2 a charge brought pursuant to this section may be commenced at any time prior to the time the victim becomes age twenty-five or within seven years of the commission of the crime, whichever is longer.

## **S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-2 (2009). SEXUAL PENETRATION DEFINED--ACTS CONSTITUTING SODOMY--MEDICAL PRACTITIONERS EXCEPTED**

Sexual penetration means an act, however slight, of sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anal intercourse, or any intrusion, however slight, of any part of the body or of any object into the genital or anal openings of another person's body. All of the foregoing acts of sexual penetration, except sexual intercourse, are also defined as sodomy. Practitioners of the healing arts lawfully practicing within the scope of their practice, which determination shall be conclusive as against the state and shall be made by the court prior to trial, are not included within the provisions of this section. In any pretrial proceeding under this section, the prosecution has the burden of establishing probable cause.

## **S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITH CHILD UNDER SIXTEEN--FELONY OR MISDEMEANOR**

Any person, sixteen years of age or older, who knowingly engages in sexual contact with another person, other than that person's spouse if the other person is under the age of sixteen years is guilty of a Class 3 felony. If the actor is less than three years older than the other person, the actor is guilty of a Class 1 misdemeanor. If an adult has a previous conviction for a felony violation of this section, any subsequent felony conviction for a violation under this section, is a Class 2 felony. Notwithstanding § 23A-42-2, a charge

brought pursuant to this section may be commenced at any time before the victim becomes age twenty-five or within seven years of the commission of the crime, whichever is longer.

### **S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7.2 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITH PERSON INCAPABLE OF CONSENTING--FELONY**

Any person, fifteen years of age or older, who knowingly engages in sexual contact with another person, other than his or her spouse if the other person is sixteen years of age or older and the other person is incapable, because of physical or mental incapacity, of consenting to sexual contact, is guilty of a Class 4 felony.

### **S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7.3 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITH CHILD UNDER SIXTEEN YEARS OF AGE--VIOLATION AS MISDEMEANOR**

Any person, younger than sixteen years of age, who knowingly engages in sexual contact with another person, other than his or her spouse, if such other person is younger than sixteen years of age, is guilty of a Class 1 misdemeanor.

### **S.D. CODIFIED LAWS § 22-22-7.4 (2009). SEXUAL CONTACT WITHOUT CONSENT WITH PERSON CAPABLE OF CONSENTING AS MISDEMEANOR**

No person fifteen years of age or older may knowingly engage in sexual contact with another person other than his or her spouse who, although capable of consenting, has not consented to such contact. A violation of this section is a Class 1 misdemeanor.

## **TENNESSEE**

### **TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-501 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

As used in §§ 39-13-501 -- 39-13-511, except as specifically provided in § 39-13-505, unless the context otherwise requires:

(1) "Coercion" means threat of kidnapping, extortion, force or violence to be performed immediately or in the future or the use of parental, custodial, or official authority over a child less than fifteen (15) years of age;

(2) "Intimate parts" includes the primary genital area, groin, inner thigh, buttock or breast of a human being;

(3) "Mentally defective" means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders that person temporarily or permanently incapable of appraising the nature of the person's conduct;

(4) "Mentally incapacitated" means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling the person's conduct due to the influence of a narcotic, anesthetic or other substance administered to that person without the person's consent, or due to any other act committed upon that person without the person's consent;

(5) "Physically helpless" means that a person is unconscious, asleep or for any other reason physically or verbally unable to communicate unwillingness to do an act;

(6) "Sexual contact" includes the intentional touching of the victim's, the defendant's, or any other person's intimate parts, or the intentional touching of the clothing covering the immediate area of the victim's, the defendant's, or any other person's intimate parts, if that intentional touching can be reasonably construed as being for the purpose of sexual arousal or gratification;

(7) "Sexual penetration" means sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anal intercourse, or any other intrusion, however slight, of any part of a person's body or of any object into the genital or anal openings of the victim's, the defendant's, or any other person's body, but emission of semen is not required; and

(8) "Victim" means the person alleged to have been subjected to criminal sexual conduct and includes the spouse of the defendant.

## **TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-502 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED RAPE**

(a) Aggravated rape is unlawful sexual penetration of a victim by the defendant or the defendant by a victim accompanied by any of the following circumstances:

(1) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the act and the defendant is armed with a weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the victim reasonably to believe it to be a weapon;

(2) The defendant causes bodily injury to the victim;

(3) The defendant is aided or abetted by one (1) or more other persons; and

(A) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the act; or

(B) The defendant knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless.

(b) Aggravated rape is a Class A felony.



## **TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-503 (West 2009). RAPE**

(a) Rape is unlawful sexual penetration of a victim by the defendant or of the defendant by a victim accompanied by any of the following circumstances:

- (1) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the act;
- (2) The sexual penetration is accomplished without the consent of the victim and the defendant knows or has reason to know at the time of the penetration that the victim did not consent;
- (3) The defendant knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless; or
- (4) The sexual penetration is accomplished by fraud.

(b) Rape is a Class B felony.

## **TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-504 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY**

(a) Aggravated sexual battery is unlawful sexual contact with a victim by the defendant or the defendant by a victim accompanied by any of the following circumstances:

- (1) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the act and the defendant is armed with a weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the victim reasonably to believe it to be a weapon;
- (2) The defendant causes bodily injury to the victim;
- (3) The defendant is aided or abetted by one (1) or more other persons; and
  - (A) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the act; or
  - (B) The defendant knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless; or
- (4) The victim is less than thirteen (13) years of age.

(b) Aggravated sexual battery is a Class B felony.

## **TENN. CODE ANN § 39-13-505 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

(a) Sexual battery is unlawful sexual contact with a victim by the defendant or the defendant by a victim accompanied by any of the following circumstances:

(1) Force or coercion is used to accomplish the act;

(2) The sexual contact is accomplished without the consent of the victim and the defendant knows or has reason to know at the time of the contact that the victim did not consent;

(3) The defendant knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless; or

(4) The sexual contact is accomplished by fraud.

(b) As used in this section, “coercion” means the threat of kidnapping, extortion, force or violence to be performed immediately or in the future.

(c) Sexual battery is a Class E felony.

## TEXAS

### TEX. PENAL CODE ANN. § 21.01 (Vernon 2009). DEFINITIONS

In this chapter:

(1) “Deviate sexual intercourse” means:

(A) any contact between any part of the genitals of one person and the mouth or anus of another person; or

(B) the penetration of the genitals or the anus of another person with an object.

(2) “Sexual contact” means, except as provided by Section 21.11, any touching of the anus, breast, or any part of the genitals of another person with intent to arouse or gratify the sexual desire of any person.

(3) “Sexual intercourse” means any penetration of the female sex organ by the male sex organ.

(4) “Spouse” means a person to whom a person is legally married under Subtitle A, Title 1, Family Code, or a comparable law of another jurisdiction.

## **TEX. PENAL CODE ANN. § 22.011 (Vernon 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) A person commits an offense if the person:

(1) intentionally or knowingly:

(A) causes the penetration of the anus or sexual organ of another person by any means, without that person's consent;

(B) causes the penetration of the mouth of another person by the sexual organ of the actor, without that person's consent; or

(C) causes the sexual organ of another person, without that person's consent, to contact or penetrate the mouth, anus, or sexual organ of another person, including the actor; or

(2) intentionally or knowingly:

(A) causes the penetration of the anus or sexual organ of a child by any means;

(B) causes the penetration of the mouth of a child by the sexual organ of the actor;

(C) causes the sexual organ of a child to contact or penetrate the mouth, anus, or sexual organ of another person, including the actor;

(D) causes the anus of a child to contact the mouth, anus, or sexual organ of another person, including the actor; or

(E) causes the mouth of a child to contact the anus or sexual organ of another person, including the actor.

(b) A sexual assault under Subsection (a)(1) is without the consent of the other person if:

(1) the actor compels the other person to submit or participate by the use of physical force or violence;

(2) the actor compels the other person to submit or participate by threatening to use force or violence against the other person, and the other person believes that the actor has the present ability to execute the threat;

(3) the other person has not consented and the actor knows the other person is unconscious or physically unable to resist;

(4) the actor knows that as a result of mental disease or defect the other person is at the time of the sexual assault incapable either of appraising the nature of the act or of resisting it;

(5) the other person has not consented and the actor knows the other person is unaware that the sexual assault is occurring;

(6) the actor has intentionally impaired the other person's power to appraise or control the other person's conduct by administering any substance without the other person's knowledge;

(7) the actor compels the other person to submit or participate by threatening to use force or violence against any person, and the other person believes that the actor has the ability to execute the threat;

(8) the actor is a public servant who coerces the other person to submit or participate;

(9) the actor is a mental health services provider or a health care services provider who causes the other person, who is a patient or former patient of the actor, to submit or participate by exploiting the other person's emotional dependency on the actor;

(10) the actor is a clergyman who causes the other person to submit or participate by exploiting the other person's emotional dependency on the clergyman in the clergyman's professional character as spiritual adviser; or

(11) the actor is an employee of a facility where the other person is a resident, unless the employee and resident are formally or informally married to each other under Chapter 2, Family Code.

(c) In this section:

(1) "Child" means a person younger than 17 years of age .

(2) "Spouse" means a person who is legally married to another.

(3) "Health care services provider" means:

(A) a physician licensed under Subtitle B, Title 3, Occupations Code;

(B) a chiropractor licensed under Chapter 201, Occupations Code;

(C) a physical therapist licensed under Chapter 453, Occupations Code;

(D) a physician assistant licensed under Chapter 204, Occupations Code; or

(E) a registered nurse, a vocational nurse, or an advanced practice nurse licensed under Chapter 301, Occupations Code.

(4) "Mental health services provider" means an individual, licensed or unlicensed, who performs or purports to perform mental health services, including a:

(A) licensed social worker as defined by Section 505.002, Occupations Code;

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

---

(B) chemical dependency counselor as defined by Section 504.001, Occupations Code;

(C) licensed professional counselor as defined by Section 503.002, Occupations Code;

(D) licensed marriage and family therapist as defined by Section 502.002, Occupations Code;

(E) member of the clergy;

(F) psychologist offering psychological services as defined by Section 501.003, Occupations Code; or

(G) special officer for mental health assignment certified under Section 1701.404, Occupations Code.

(5) “Employee of a facility” means a person who is an employee of a facility defined by Section 250.001, Health and Safety Code, or any other person who provides services for a facility for compensation, including a contract laborer.

(d) It is a defense to prosecution under Subsection (a)(2) that the conduct consisted of medical care for the child and did not include any contact between the anus or sexual organ of the child and the mouth, anus, or sexual organ of the actor or a third party.

(e) It is an affirmative defense to prosecution under Subsection (a)(2):

(1) that the actor was the spouse of the child at the time of the offense; or

(2) that:

(A) the actor was not more than three years older than the victim and at the time of the offense:

(i) was not required under Chapter 62, Code of Criminal Procedure, to register for life as a sex offender; or

(ii) was not a person who under Chapter 62, Code of Criminal Procedure, had a reportable conviction or adjudication for an offense under this section; and

(B) the victim:

(i) was a child of 14 years of age or older; and

(ii) was not a person whom the actor was prohibited from marrying or purporting to marry or with whom the actor was prohibited from living under the appearance of being married under Section 25.01.

(f) An offense under this section is a felony of the second degree, except that an offense under this section is a felony of the first degree if the victim was a person whom the actor was prohibited from marrying or purporting to marry or with whom the actor was prohibited from living under the appearance of being married under Section 25.01.

## **TEX. PENAL CODE ANN. § 22.021 (Vernon 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) A person commits an offense:

(1) if the person:

(A) intentionally or knowingly:

(i) causes the penetration of the anus or sexual organ of another person by any means, without that person's consent;

(ii) causes the penetration of the mouth of another person by the sexual organ of the actor, without that person's consent; or

(iii) causes the sexual organ of another person, without that person's consent, to contact or penetrate the mouth, anus, or sexual organ of another person, including the actor; or

(B) intentionally or knowingly:

(i) causes the penetration of the anus or sexual organ of a child by any means;

(ii) causes the penetration of the mouth of a child by the sexual organ of the actor;

(iii) causes the sexual organ of a child to contact or penetrate the mouth, anus, or sexual organ of another person, including the actor;

(iv) causes the anus of a child to contact the mouth, anus, or sexual organ of another person, including the actor; or

(v) causes the mouth of a child to contact the anus or sexual organ of another person, including the actor; and

(2) if:

(A) the person:

(i) causes serious bodily injury or attempts to cause the death of the victim or another person in the course of the same criminal episode;

(ii) by acts or words places the victim in fear that death, serious bodily injury, or kidnapping will be imminently inflicted on any person;

(iii) by acts or words occurring in the presence of the victim threatens to cause the death, serious bodily injury, or kidnapping of any person;

(iv) uses or exhibits a deadly weapon in the course of the same criminal episode;

(v) acts in concert with another who engages in conduct described by Subdivision (1) directed toward the same victim and occurring during the course of the same criminal episode; or

(vi) administers or provides flunitrazepam, otherwise known as rohypnol, gamma hydroxybutyrate, or ketamine to the victim of the offense with the intent of facilitating the commission of the offense;

(B) the victim is younger than 14 years of age; or

(C) the victim is an elderly individual or a disabled individual.

(b) In this section:

(1) “Child” has the meaning assigned by Section 22.011(c).

(2) “Elderly individual” and “disabled individual” have the meanings assigned by Section 22.04(c).

(c) An aggravated sexual assault under this section is without the consent of the other person if the aggravated sexual assault occurs under the same circumstances listed in Section 22.011(b).

(d) The defense provided by Section 22.011(d) applies to this section.

(e) An offense under this section is a felony of the first degree.

(f) The minimum term of imprisonment for an offense under this section is increased to 25 years if:

(1) the victim of the offense is younger than six years of age at the time the offense is committed; or

(2) the victim of the offense is younger than 14 years of age at the time the offense is committed and the actor commits the offense in a manner described by Subsection (a)(2)(A).

## UTAH

## UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-402 (West 2009). RAPE

(1) A person commits rape when the actor has sexual intercourse with another person without the victim's consent.

(2) This section applies whether or not the actor is married to the victim.

(3) Rape is a felony of the first degree, punishable by a term of imprisonment of:

(a) except as provided in Subsection (3)(b) or (c), not less than five years and which may be for life;

(b) except as provided in Subsection (3)(c) or (4), 15 years and which may be for life, if the trier of fact finds that during the course of the commission of the rape the defendant caused serious bodily injury to another; or

(c) life without parole, if the trier of fact finds that at the time of the commission of the rape the defendant was previously convicted of a grievous sexual offense.

(4) If, when imposing a sentence under Subsection (3)(b), a court finds that a lesser term than the term described in Subsection (3)(b) is in the interests of justice and states the reasons for this finding on the record, the court may impose a term of imprisonment of not less than:

(a) ten years and which may be for life; or

(b) six years and which may be for life.

(5) The provisions of Subsection (4) do not apply when a person is sentenced under Subsection (3)(a) or (c).

(6) Imprisonment under Subsection (3)(b), (3)(c), or (4) is mandatory in accordance with Section 76-3-406.

## UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-402.2 (West 2009). OBJECT RAPE

(1) A person who, without the victim's consent, causes the penetration, however slight, of the genital or anal opening of another person who is 14 years of age or older, by any foreign object, substance, instrument, or device, including a part of the human body other than the mouth or genitals, with intent to cause substantial emotional or bodily pain to the victim or with the intent to arouse or gratify the sexual desire of any person, commits an offense which is a first degree felony, punishable by a term of imprisonment of:



(a) except as provided in Subsection (1)(b) or (c), not less than five years and which may be for life;

(b) except as provided in Subsection (1)(c) or (2), 15 years and which may be for life, if the trier of fact finds that during the course of the commission of the object rape the defendant caused serious bodily injury to another; or

(c) life without parole, if the trier of fact finds that at the time of the commission of the object rape, the defendant was previously convicted of a grievous sexual offense.

(2) If, when imposing a sentence under Subsection (1)(b), a court finds that a lesser term than the term described in Subsection (1)(b) is in the interests of justice and states the reasons for this finding on the record, the court may impose a term of imprisonment of not less than:

(a) ten years and which may be for life; or

(b) six years and which may be for life.

(3) The provisions of Subsection (2) do not apply when a person is sentenced under Subsection (1)(a) or (c).

(4) Imprisonment under Subsection (1)(b), (1)(c), or (2) is mandatory in accordance with Section 76-3-406.

## **UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-403 (West 2009). SODOMY--FORCIBLE SODOMY**

(1) A person commits sodomy when the actor engages in any sexual act with a person who is 14 years of age or older involving the genitals of one person and mouth or anus of another person, regardless of the sex of either participant.

(2) A person commits forcible sodomy when the actor commits sodomy upon another without the other's consent.

(3) Sodomy is a class B misdemeanor.

(4) Forcible sodomy is a felony of the first degree, punishable by a term of imprisonment of:

(a) except as provided in Subsection (4)(b) or (c), not less than five years and which may be for life;

(b) except as provided in Subsection (4)(c) or (5), 15 years and which may be for life, if the trier of fact finds that during the course of the commission of the forcible sodomy the defendant caused serious bodily injury to another; or

(c) life without parole, if the trier of fact finds that at the time of the commission of the forcible sodomy the defendant was previously convicted of a grievous sexual offense.

(5) If, when imposing a sentence under Subsection (4)(b), a court finds that a lesser term than the term described in Subsection (4)(b) is in the interests of justice and states the reasons for this finding on the record, the court may impose a term of imprisonment of not less than:

(a) ten years and which may be for life; or

(b) six years and which may be for life.

(6) The provisions of Subsection (5) do not apply when a person is sentenced under Subsection (4)(a) or (c).

(7) Imprisonment under Subsection (4)(b), (4)(c), or (5) is mandatory in accordance with Section 76-3-406.

## **UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-404 (West 2009). FORCIBLE SEXUAL ABUSE**

(1) A person commits forcible sexual abuse if the victim is 14 years of age or older and, under circumstances not amounting to rape, object rape, sodomy, or attempted rape or sodomy, the actor touches the anus, buttocks, or any part of the genitals of another, or touches the breast of a female, or otherwise takes indecent liberties with another, or causes another to take indecent liberties with the actor or another, with intent to cause substantial emotional or bodily pain to any person or with the intent to arouse or gratify the sexual desire of any person, without the consent of the other, regardless of the sex of any participant.

(2) Forcible sexual abuse is:

(a) except as provided in Subsection (2)(b), a felony of the second degree, punishable by a term of imprisonment of not less than one year nor more than 15 years; or

(b) except as provided in Subsection (3), a felony of the first degree, punishable by imprisonment for 15 years and which may be for life, if the trier of fact finds that during the course of the commission of the forcible sexual abuse the defendant caused serious bodily injury to another.

(3) If, when imposing a sentence under Subsection (2)(b), a court finds that a lesser term than the term described in Subsection (2)(b) is in the interests of justice and states the reasons for this finding on the record, the court may impose a term of imprisonment of not less than:

(a) ten years and which may be for life; or

(b) six years and which may be for life.

(4) Imprisonment under Subsection (2)(b) or (3) is mandatory in accordance with Section 76-3-406.

**UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-405 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT--  
PENALTY**

(1) A person commits aggravated sexual assault if:

(a) in the course of a rape, object rape, forcible sodomy, or forcible sexual abuse, the actor:

(i) uses, or threatens the victim with the use of, a dangerous weapon as defined in Section 76-1-601;

(ii) compels, or attempts to compel, the victim to submit to rape, object rape, forcible sodomy, or forcible sexual abuse, by threat of kidnaping, death, or serious bodily injury to be inflicted imminently on any person; or

(iii) is aided or abetted by one or more persons;

(b) in the course of an attempted rape, attempted object rape, or attempted forcible sodomy, the actor:

(i) causes serious bodily injury to any person;

(ii) uses, or threatens the victim with the use of, a dangerous weapon as defined in Section 76-1-601;

(iii) attempts to compel the victim to submit to rape, object rape, or forcible sodomy, by threat of kidnaping, death, or serious bodily injury to be inflicted imminently on any person; or

(iv) is aided or abetted by one or more persons ; or

(c) in the course of an attempted forcible sexual abuse, the actor:

(i) causes serious bodily injury to any person;

(ii) uses, or threatens the victim with the use of, a dangerous weapon as defined in Section 76-1-601;

(iii) attempts to compel the victim to submit to forcible sexual abuse, by threat of kidnaping, death, or serious bodily injury to be inflicted imminently on any person; or

(iv) is aided or abetted by one or more persons.

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(2) Aggravated sexual assault is a first degree felony, punishable by a term of imprisonment of:

(a) for an aggravated sexual assault described in Subsection (1)(a):

(i) except as provided in Subsection (2)(a)(ii) or (3)(a), not less than 15 years and which may be for life; or

(ii) life without parole, if the trier of fact finds that at the time of the commission of the aggravated sexual assault, the defendant was previously convicted of a grievous sexual offense ;

(b) for an aggravated sexual assault described in Subsection (1)(b):

(i) except as provided in Subsection (2)(b)(ii) or (4)(a), not less than ten years and which may be for life; or

(ii) life without parole, if the trier of fact finds that at the time of the commission of the aggravated sexual assault, the defendant was previously convicted of a grievous sexual offense; or

(c) for an aggravated sexual assault described in Subsection (1)(c):

(i) except as provided in Subsection (2)(c)(ii) or (5)(a), not less than six years and which may be for life; or

(ii) life without parole, if the trier of fact finds that at the time of the commission of the aggravated sexual assault, the defendant was previously convicted of a grievous sexual offense.

(3)(a) If, when imposing a sentence under Subsection (2)(a)(i), a court finds that a lesser term than the term described in Subsection (2)(a)(i) is in the interests of justice and states the reasons for this finding on the record, the court may impose a term of imprisonment of not less than:

(i) ten years and which may be for life; or

(ii) six years and which may be for life.

(b) The provisions of Subsection (3)(a) do not apply when a person is sentenced under Subsection (2) (a)(ii).

(4)(a) If, when imposing a sentence under Subsection (2)(b)(i), a court finds that a lesser term than the term described in Subsection (2)(b)(i) is in the interests of justice and states the reasons for this finding on the record, the court may impose a term of imprisonment of not less than six years and which may be for life.

(b) The provisions of Subsection (4)(a) do not apply when a person is sentenced under Subsection (2)(b)(ii).

(5)(a) If, when imposing a sentence under Subsection (2)(c)(i), a court finds that a lesser term than the term described in Subsection (2)(c)(i) is in the interests of justice and states the reasons for this finding on the record, the court may impose a term of imprisonment of not less than three years and which may be for life.

(b) The provisions of Subsection (5)(a) do not apply when a person is sentenced under Subsection (2)(c)(ii).

(6) Imprisonment under this section is mandatory in accordance with Section 76-3-406.

### **UTAH CODE ANN. § 76-5-406 (West 2009). SEXUAL OFFENSES AGAINST THE VICTIM WITHOUT CONSENT OF VICTIM--CIRCUMSTANCES**

An act of sexual intercourse, rape, attempted rape, rape of a child, attempted rape of a child, object rape, attempted object rape, object rape of a child, attempted object rape of a child, sodomy, attempted sodomy, forcible sodomy, attempted forcible sodomy, sodomy upon a child, attempted sodomy upon a child, forcible sexual abuse, attempted forcible sexual abuse, sexual abuse of a child, attempted sexual abuse of a child, aggravated sexual abuse of a child, attempted aggravated sexual abuse of a child, or simple sexual abuse is without consent of the victim under any of the following circumstances:

(1) the victim expresses lack of consent through words or conduct;

(2) the actor overcomes the victim through the actual application of physical force or violence;

(3) the actor is able to overcome the victim through concealment or by the element of surprise;

(4)(a)(i) the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to retaliate in the immediate future against the victim or any other person, and the victim perceives at the time that the actor has the ability to execute this threat; or

(ii) the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim or any other person, and the victim believes at the time that the actor has the ability to execute this threat;

(b) as used in this Subsection (4) “to retaliate” includes but is not limited to threats of physical force, kidnapping, or extortion;

(5) the victim has not consented and the actor knows the victim is unconscious, unaware that the act is occurring, or physically unable to resist;

(6) the actor knows that as a result of mental disease or defect, the victim is at the time of the act incapable either of appraising the nature of the act or of resisting it;

(7) the actor knows that the victim submits or participates because the victim erroneously believes that the actor is the victim's spouse;

(8) the actor intentionally impaired the power of the victim to appraise or control his or her conduct by administering any substance without the victim's knowledge;

(9) the victim is younger than 14 years of age;

(10) the victim is younger than 18 years of age and at the time of the offense the actor was the victim's parent, stepparent, adoptive parent, or legal guardian or occupied a position of special trust in relation to the victim as defined in Subsection 76-5-404.1(4)(h);

(11) the victim is 14 years of age or older, but younger than 18 years of age, and the actor is more than three years older than the victim and entices or coerces the victim to submit or participate, under circumstances not amounting to the force or threat required under Subsection (2) or (4); or

(12) the actor is a health professional or religious counselor, as those terms are defined in this Subsection (12), the act is committed under the guise of providing professional diagnosis, counseling, or treatment, and at the time of the act the victim reasonably believed that the act was for medically or professionally appropriate diagnosis, counseling, or treatment to the extent that resistance by the victim could not reasonably be expected to have been manifested. For purposes of this Subsection (12):

(a) "health professional" means an individual who is licensed or who holds himself out to be licensed, or who otherwise provides professional physical or mental health services, diagnosis, treatment, or counseling including, but not limited to, a physician, osteopathic physician, nurse, dentist, physical therapist, chiropractor, mental health therapist, social service worker, clinical social worker, certified social worker, marriage and family therapist, professional counselor, psychiatrist, psychologist, psychiatric mental health nurse specialist, or substance abuse counselor; and

(b) "religious counselor" means a minister, priest, rabbi, bishop, or other recognized member of the clergy.

## VERMONT

### **Vt. STAT. ANN. tit 13, § 3251 (2009). DEFINITIONS**

As used in this chapter:

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

*Compilation created by AEquitas and supported by Grant No. 2009-TA-AX-K024 awarded by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office on Violence Against Women (OVW). The opinions, findings, conclusions, and recommendations expressed in this document are those of the author(s) and do not necessarily reflect the views of OVW.*

(1) A “sexual act” means conduct between persons consisting of contact between the penis and the vulva, the penis and the anus, the mouth and the penis, the mouth and the vulva, or any intrusion, however slight, by any part of a person's body or any object into the genital or anal opening of another.

(2) “Sexual conduct” means any conduct or behavior relating to sexual activities of the complaining witness, including but not limited to prior experience of sexual acts, use of contraceptives, living arrangement and mode of living.

(3) “Consent” means words or actions by a person indicating a voluntary agreement to engage in a sexual act.

(4) “Serious bodily injury” shall have the same meaning as in subdivision 1021(2) of this title;

(5) “Bodily injury” means physical pain, illness or any impairment of physical condition.

(6) “Actor” means a person charged with sexual assault or aggravated sexual assault.

(7) “Deadly force” means physical force which a person uses with the intent of causing, or which the person knows or should have known would create a substantial risk of causing, death or serious bodily injury.

(8) “Deadly weapon” means

(A) any firearm; or

(B) any weapon, device, instrument, material or substance, whether animate or inanimate, which in the manner it is used or is intended to be used, is known to be capable of producing death or serious bodily injury.

## **VT. STAT. ANN. tit 13, § 3252 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) No person shall engage in a sexual act with another person and compel the other person to participate in a sexual act:

(1) without the consent of the other person; or

(2) by threatening or coercing the other person; or

(3) by placing the other person in fear that any person will suffer imminent bodily injury.

(b) No person shall engage in a sexual act with another person and impair substantially the ability of the other person to appraise or control conduct by administering or employing drugs or intoxicants without the knowledge or against the will of the other person.

(c) No person shall engage in a sexual act with a child who is under the age of 16, except:

(1) where the persons are married to each other and the sexual act is consensual; or

(2) where the person is less than 19 years old, the child is at least 15 years old, and the sexual act is consensual.

(d) No person shall engage in a sexual act with a child who is under the age of 18 and is entrusted to the actor's care by authority of law or is the actor's child, grandchild, foster child, adopted child, or stepchild.

(e) No person shall engage in a sexual act with a child under the age of 16 if:

(1) the victim is entrusted to the actor's care by authority of law or is the actor's child, grandchild, foster child, adopted child, or stepchild; or

(2) the actor is at least 18 years of age, resides in the victim's household, and serves in a parental role with respect to the victim.

(f)(1) A person who violates subsection (a), (b), (d), or (e) of this section shall be imprisoned not less than three years and for a maximum term of life, and, in addition, may be fined not more than \$25,000.00.

(2) A person who violates subsection (c) of this section shall be imprisoned for not more than 20 years, and, in addition, may be fined not more than \$10,000.00.

(g) A person convicted of violating subsection (a), (b), (d), or (e) of this section shall be sentenced under section 3271 of this title.

## **VT. STAT. ANN. tit 13, § 3253 (2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) A person commits the crime of aggravated sexual assault if the person commits sexual assault under any one of the following circumstances:

(1) At the time of the sexual assault, the actor causes serious bodily injury to the victim or to another.

(2) The actor is joined or assisted by one or more persons in physically restraining, assaulting or sexually assaulting the victim.

(3) The actor commits the sexual act under circumstances which constitute the crime of kidnapping.

(4) The actor has previously been convicted in this state of sexual assault under subsection 3252(a) or (b) of this title or aggravated sexual assault or has been convicted in any



jurisdiction in the United States or territories of an offense which would constitute sexual assault under subsection 3252(a) or (b) of this title or aggravated sexual assault if committed in this state.

(5) At the time of the sexual assault, the actor is armed with a deadly weapon and uses or threatens to use the deadly weapon on the victim or on another.

(6) At the time of the sexual assault, the actor threatens to cause imminent serious bodily injury to the victim or to another and the victim reasonably believes that the actor has the present ability to carry out the threat.

(7) At the time of the sexual assault, the actor applies deadly force to the victim.

(8) The victim is under the age of 13 and the actor is at least 18 years of age.

(9) The victim is subjected by the actor to repeated nonconsensual sexual acts as part of the same occurrence or the victim is subjected to repeated nonconsensual sexual acts as part of the actor's common scheme and plan.

(b) A person who commits the crime of aggravated sexual assault shall be imprisoned not less than ten years and a maximum term of life, and, in addition, may be fined not more than \$50,000.00.

(c)(1) Except as provided in subdivision (2) of this subsection, a sentence ordered pursuant to subsection (b) of this section shall include at least a ten-year term of imprisonment. The ten-year term of imprisonment required by this subdivision shall be served and may not be suspended, deferred, or served as a supervised sentence. The defendant shall not be eligible for probation, parole, furlough, or any other type of early release until the expiration of the five-year or ten-year term of imprisonment.

(2) The court may depart downwardly from the ten-year term of imprisonment required by subsection (b) of this section and impose a lesser term of incarceration if the court makes written findings on the record that the downward departure will serve the interests of justice and public safety, provided that in no event may the court impose a term of incarceration of less than five years.

(d) A person convicted of violating this section shall be sentenced under section 3271 of this title.

## **VIRGINIA**

### **VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-61 (West 2009). RAPE**

A. If any person has sexual intercourse with a complaining witness, whether or not his or her spouse, or causes a complaining witness, whether or not his or her spouse, to engage in sexual intercourse with any other person and such act is accomplished (i) against the complaining witness's will, by force, threat or intimidation of or against the complaining witness or another person; or (ii) through the use of the complaining witness's mental incapacity or physical helplessness; or (iii) with a child under age 13 as the victim, he or she shall be guilty of rape.

B. A violation of this section shall be punishable, in the discretion of the court or jury, by confinement in a state correctional facility for life or for any term not less than five years; the penalty for a violation of subdivision A (iii), where the offender is more than three years older than the victim, if done in the commission of, or as part of the same course of conduct as, or as part of a common scheme or plan as a violation of (i) subsection A of § 18.2-47 or § 18.2-48, (ii) § 18.2-89, 18.2-90 or 18.2-91, or (iii) § 18.2-51.2, shall include a mandatory minimum term of confinement of 25 years. If the term of confinement imposed for any violation of subdivision A (iii), where the offender is more than three years older than the victim, is for a term less than life imprisonment, the judge shall impose, in addition to any active sentence, a suspended sentence of no less than 40 years. This suspended sentence shall be suspended for the remainder of the defendant's life, subject to revocation by the court.

There shall be a rebuttable presumption that a juvenile over the age of 10 but less than 12, does not possess the physical capacity to commit a violation of this section. In any case deemed appropriate by the court, all or part of any sentence imposed for a violation under this section against a spouse may be suspended upon the defendant's completion of counseling or therapy, if not already provided, in the manner prescribed under § 19.2-218.1 if, after consideration of the views of the complaining witness and such other evidence as may be relevant, the court finds such action will promote maintenance of the family unit and will be in the best interest of the complaining witness.

C. Upon a finding of guilt under this section, when a spouse is the complaining witness in any case tried by the court without a jury, the court, without entering a judgment of guilt, upon motion of the defendant who has not previously had a proceeding against him for violation of this section dismissed pursuant to this subsection and with the consent of the complaining witness and the attorney for the Commonwealth, may defer further proceedings and place the defendant on probation pending completion of counseling or therapy, if not already provided, in the manner prescribed under § 19.2-218.1. If the defendant fails to so complete such counseling or therapy, the court may make final disposition of the case and proceed as otherwise provided. If such counseling is completed as prescribed under § 19.2-218.1, the court may discharge the defendant and dismiss the proceedings against him if, after consideration of the views of the complaining witness and such other evidence as may be relevant, the court finds such action will promote maintenance of the family unit and be in the best interest of the complaining witness.

## **VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-63.1 (West 2009). DEATH OF VICTIM**

When the death of the victim occurs in connection with an offense under this article, it shall be immaterial in the prosecution thereof whether the alleged offense occurred before or after the death of the victim.

## **VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.1 (West 2009). FORCIBLE SODOMY**

A. An accused shall be guilty of forcible sodomy if he or she engages in cunnilingus, fellatio, anilingus, or anal intercourse with a complaining witness whether or not his or her spouse, or causes a complaining witness, whether or not his or her spouse, to engage in such acts with any other person, and

1. The complaining witness is less than 13 years of age, or
2. The act is accomplished against the will of the complaining witness, by force, threat or intimidation of or against the complaining witness or another person, or through the use of the complaining witness's mental incapacity or physical helplessness.

B. Forcible sodomy is a felony punishable by confinement in a state correctional facility for life or for any term not less than five years. The penalty for a violation of subdivision A 1, where the offender is more than three years older than the victim, if done in the commission of, or as part of the same course of conduct as, or as part of a common scheme or plan as a violation of (i) subsection A of § 18.2-47 or 18.2-48, (ii) § 18.2-89, 18.2-90 or 18.2-91, or (iii) § 18.2-51.2, shall include a mandatory minimum term of confinement of 25 years. If the term of confinement imposed for any violation of subdivision A 1, where the offender is more than three years older than the victim, is for a term less than life imprisonment, the judge shall impose, in addition to any active sentence, a suspended sentence of no less than 40 years. This suspended sentence shall be suspended for the remainder of the defendant's life, subject to revocation by the court.

In any case deemed appropriate by the court, all or part of any sentence imposed for a violation under this section against a spouse may be suspended upon the defendant's completion of counseling or therapy, if not already provided, in the manner prescribed under § 19.2-218.1 if, after consideration of the views of the complaining witness and such other evidence as may be relevant, the court finds such action will promote maintenance of the family unit and will be in the best interest of the complaining witness.

C. Upon a finding of guilt under this section, when a spouse is the complaining witness in any case tried by the court without a jury, the court, without entering a judgment of guilt, upon motion of the defendant who has not previously had a proceeding against him for violation of this section dismissed pursuant to this subsection and with the consent of the complaining witness and the attorney for the Commonwealth, may defer further proceedings and place the defendant on probation pending completion of counseling or therapy, if not already provided, in the manner prescribed under § 19.2-218.1. If the defendant fails to so complete such counseling or therapy, the court may make final disposition of the case and proceed as otherwise provided. If such counseling is completed as prescribed under § 19.2-218.1, the court may discharge the defendant and dismiss the

proceedings against him if, after consideration of the views of the complaining witness and such other evidence as may be relevant, the court finds such action will promote maintenance of the family unit and be in the best interest of the complaining witness.

## **VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.2 (West 2009). OBJECT SEXUAL PENETRATION; PENALTY**

A. An accused shall be guilty of inanimate or animate object sexual penetration if he or she penetrates the labia majora or anus of a complaining witness, whether or not his or her spouse, other than for a bona fide medical purpose, or causes such complaining witness to so penetrate his or her own body with an object or causes a complaining witness, whether or not his or her spouse, to engage in such acts with any other person or to penetrate, or to be penetrated by, an animal, and

1. The complaining witness is less than 13 years of age, or
2. The act is accomplished against the will of the complaining witness, by force, threat or intimidation of or against the complaining witness or another person, or through the use of the complaining witness's mental incapacity or physical helplessness.

B. Inanimate or animate object sexual penetration is a felony punishable by confinement in the state correctional facility for life or for any term not less than five years. The penalty for a violation of subdivision A 1 where the offender is more than three years older than the victim, if done in the commission of, or as part of the same course of conduct as, or as part of a common scheme or plan as a violation of (i) subsection A of § 18.2-47 or 18.2-48, (ii) § 18.2-89, 18.2-90 or 18.2-91, or (iii) § 18.2-51.2, shall include a mandatory minimum term of confinement of 25 years. If the term of confinement imposed for any violation of subdivision A 1, where the offender is more than three years older than the victim, is for a term less than life imprisonment, the judge shall impose, in addition to any active sentence, a suspended sentence of no less than 40 years. This suspended sentence shall be suspended for the remainder of the defendant's life, subject to revocation by the court.

In any case deemed appropriate by the court, all or part of any sentence imposed for a violation under this section against a spouse may be suspended upon the defendant's completion of counseling or therapy, if not already provided, in the manner prescribed under § 19.2-218.1 if, after consideration of the views of the complaining witness and such other evidence as may be relevant, the court finds such action will promote maintenance of the family unit and will be in the best interest of the complaining witness.

C. Upon a finding of guilt under this section, when a spouse is the complaining witness in any case tried by the court without a jury, the court, without entering a judgment of guilt, upon motion of the defendant who has not previously had a proceeding against him for violation of this section dismissed pursuant to this subsection and with the consent of the complaining witness and the attorney for the Commonwealth, may defer further proceedings and place the defendant on probation pending completion of counseling or therapy, if not already provided, in the manner prescribed under § 19.2-218.1. If the

defendant fails to so complete such counseling or therapy, the court may make final disposition of the case and proceed as otherwise provided. If such counseling is completed as prescribed under § 19.2-218.1, the court may discharge the defendant and dismiss the proceedings against him if, after consideration of the views of the complaining witness and such other evidence as may be relevant, the court finds such action will promote maintenance of the family unit and be in the best interest of the complaining witness.

### **VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.3 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY; PENALTY**

A. An accused shall be guilty of aggravated sexual battery if he or she sexually abuses the complaining witness, and

1. The complaining witness is less than 13 years of age, or
2. The act is accomplished through the use of the complaining witness's mental incapacity or physical helplessness, or
3. The offense is committed by a parent, step-parent, grandparent, or step-grandparent and the complaining witness is at least 13 but less than 18 years of age, or
4. The act is accomplished against the will of the complaining witness by force, threat or intimidation, and
  - a. The complaining witness is at least 13 but less than 15 years of age, or
  - b. The accused causes serious bodily or mental injury to the complaining witness, or
  - c. The accused uses or threatens to use a dangerous weapon.

B. Aggravated sexual battery is a felony punishable by confinement in a state correctional facility for a term of not less than one nor more than 20 years and by a fine of not more than \$100,000.

### **VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.4 (West 2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

A. An accused is guilty of sexual battery if he sexually abuses, as defined in § 18.2-67.10, (i) the complaining witness against the will of the complaining witness, by force, threat, intimidation, or ruse, (ii) an inmate who has been committed to jail or convicted and sentenced to confinement in a state or local correctional facility or regional jail, and the accused is an employee or contractual employee of, or a volunteer with, the state or local correctional facility or regional jail; is in a position of authority over the inmate; and knows that the inmate is under the jurisdiction of the state or local correctional facility or regional jail, or (iii) a probationer, parolee, or a pretrial defendant or posttrial offender under the

jurisdiction of the Department of Corrections, a local community-based probation services agency, a pretrial services agency, a local or regional jail for the purposes of imprisonment, a work program or any other parole/probationary or pretrial services or agency and the accused is an employee or contractual employee of, or a volunteer with, the Department of Corrections, a local community-based probation services agency, a pretrial services agency or a local or regional jail; is in a position of authority over an offender; and knows that the offender is under the jurisdiction of the Department of Corrections, a local community-based probation services agency, a pretrial services agency or a local or regional jail.

B. Sexual battery is a Class 1 misdemeanor.

**VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.4:1 (West 2009). INFECTED SEXUAL BATTERY;  
PENALTY**

A. Any person who, knowing he is infected with HIV, syphilis, or hepatitis B, has sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anallings or anal intercourse with the intent to transmit the infection to another person is guilty of a Class 6 felony.

B. Any person who, knowing he is infected with HIV, syphilis, or hepatitis B, has sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anallings or anal intercourse with another person without having previously disclosed the existence of his infection to the other person is guilty of a Class 1 misdemeanor.

C. "HIV" means the human immunodeficiency virus or any other related virus that causes acquired immunodeficiency syndrome (AIDS).

Nothing in this section shall prevent the prosecution of any other crime against persons under Chapter 4 (§ 18.2-30 *et seq.*) of this title. Any person charged with a violation of this section alleging he is infected with HIV shall be subject to the testing provisions of § 18.2-62.

**VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.5 (West 2009). ATTEMPTED RAPE, FORCIBLE  
SODOMY, OBJECT SEXUAL PENETRATION, AGGRAVATED SEXUAL BATTERY, AND  
SEXUAL BATTERY**

A. An attempt to commit rape, forcible sodomy, or inanimate or animate object sexual penetration shall be punishable as a Class 4 felony.

B. An attempt to commit aggravated sexual battery shall be a felony punishable as a Class 6 felony.

C. An attempt to commit sexual battery is a Class 1 misdemeanor.

## **VA. CODE ANN. § 18.2-67.6 (West 2009). PROOF OF PHYSICAL RESISTANCE NOT REQUIRED**

The Commonwealth need not demonstrate that the complaining witness cried out or physically resisted the accused in order to convict the accused of an offense under this article, but the absence of such resistance may be considered when relevant to show that the act alleged was not against the will of the complaining witness.

## **WASHINGTON**

### **WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.010 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS**

As used in this chapter:

(1) “Sexual intercourse” (a) has its ordinary meaning and occurs upon any penetration, however slight, and

(b) Also means any penetration of the vagina or anus however slight, by an object, when committed on one person by another, whether such persons are of the same or opposite sex, except when such penetration is accomplished for medically recognized treatment or diagnostic purposes, and

(c) Also means any act of sexual contact between persons involving the sex organs of one person and the mouth or anus of another whether such persons are of the same or opposite sex.

(2) “Sexual contact” means any touching of the sexual or other intimate parts of a person done for the purpose of gratifying sexual desire of either party or a third party.

(3) “Married” means one who is legally married to another, but does not include a person who is living separate and apart from his or her spouse and who has filed in an appropriate court for legal separation or for dissolution of his or her marriage.

(4) “Mental incapacity” is that condition existing at the time of the offense which prevents a person from understanding the nature or consequences of the act of sexual intercourse whether that condition is produced by illness, defect, the influence of a substance or from some other cause.

(5) “Physically helpless” means a person who is unconscious or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

(6) “Forcible compulsion” means physical force which overcomes resistance, or a threat, express or implied, that places a person in fear of death or physical injury to herself or himself or another person, or in fear that she or he or another person will be kidnapped.

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(7) “Consent” means that at the time of the act of sexual intercourse or sexual contact there are actual words or conduct indicating freely given agreement to have sexual intercourse or sexual contact.

(8) “Significant relationship” means a situation in which the perpetrator is:

(a) A person who undertakes the responsibility, professionally or voluntarily, to provide education, health, welfare, or organized recreational activities principally for minors;

(b) A person who in the course of his or her employment supervises minors; or

(c) A person who provides welfare, health or residential assistance, personal care, or organized recreational activities to frail elders or vulnerable adults, including a provider, employee, temporary employee, volunteer, or independent contractor who supplies services to long-term care facilities licensed or required to be licensed under chapter 18.20, 18.51, 72.36, or 70.128 RCW, and home health, hospice, or home care agencies licensed or required to be licensed under chapter 70.127 RCW, but not including a consensual sexual partner.

(9) “Abuse of a supervisory position” means:

(a) To use a direct or indirect threat or promise to exercise authority to the detriment or benefit of a minor; or

(b) To exploit a significant relationship in order to obtain the consent of a minor.

(10) “Person with a developmental disability,” for purposes of RCW 9A.44.050(1)(c) and 9A.44.100(1)(c), means a person with a developmental disability as defined in RCW 71A.10.020.

(11) “Person with supervisory authority,” for purposes of RCW 9A.44.050(1)(c) or (e) and 9A.44.100(1)(c) or (e), means any proprietor or employee of any public or private care or treatment facility who directly supervises developmentally disabled, mentally disordered, or chemically dependent persons at the facility.

(12) “Person with a mental disorder” for the purposes of RCW 9A.44.050(1)(e) and 9A.44.100(1)(e) means a person with a “mental disorder” as defined in RCW 71.05.020.

(13) “Person with a chemical dependency” for purposes of RCW 9A.44.050(1)(e) and 9A.44.100(1)(e) means a person who is “chemically dependent” as defined in RCW 70.96A.020(4).

(14) “Health care provider” for purposes of RCW 9A.44.050 and 9A.44.100 means a person who is, holds himself or herself out to be, or provides services as if he or she were: (a) A member of a health care profession under chapter 18.130 RCW; or (b) registered under



chapter 18.19 RCW or licensed under chapter 18.225 RCW, regardless of whether the health care provider is licensed, certified, or registered by the state.

(15) “Treatment” for purposes of RCW 9A.44.050 and 9A.44.100 means the active delivery of professional services by a health care provider which the health care provider holds himself or herself out to be qualified to provide.

(16) “Frail elder or vulnerable adult” means a person sixty years of age or older who has the functional, mental, or physical inability to care for himself or herself. “Frail elder or vulnerable adult” also includes a person found incapacitated under chapter 11.88 RCW, a person over eighteen years of age who has a developmental disability under chapter 71A.10 RCW, a person admitted to a long-term care facility that is licensed or required to be licensed under chapter 18.20, 18.51, 72.36, or 70.128 RCW, and a person receiving services from a home health, hospice, or home care agency licensed or required to be licensed under chapter 70.127 RCW.

### **WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.040 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of rape in the first degree when such person engages in sexual intercourse with another person by forcible compulsion where the perpetrator or an accessory:

- (a) Uses or threatens to use a deadly weapon or what appears to be a deadly weapon; or
- (b) Kidnaps the victim; or
- (c) Inflicts serious physical injury, including but not limited to physical injury which renders the victim unconscious; or
- (d) Feloniously enters into the building or vehicle where the victim is situated.

(2) Rape in the first degree is a class A felony.

### **WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.050 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of rape in the second degree when, under circumstances not constituting rape in the first degree, the person engages in sexual intercourse with another person:

- (a) By forcible compulsion;

- (b) When the victim is incapable of consent by reason of being physically helpless or mentally incapacitated;
- (c) When the victim is a person with a developmental disability and the perpetrator is a person who is not married to the victim and who:
- (i) Has supervisory authority over the victim; or
  - (ii) Was providing transportation, within the course of his or her employment, to the victim at the time of the offense;
- (d) When the perpetrator is a health care provider, the victim is a client or patient, and the sexual intercourse occurs during a treatment session, consultation, interview, or examination. It is an affirmative defense that the defendant must prove by a preponderance of the evidence that the client or patient consented to the sexual intercourse with the knowledge that the sexual intercourse was not for the purpose of treatment;
- (e) When the victim is a resident of a facility for persons with a mental disorder or chemical dependency and the perpetrator is a person who is not married to the victim and has supervisory authority over the victim; or
- (f) When the victim is a frail elder or vulnerable adult and the perpetrator is a person who is not married to the victim and who:
- (i) Has a significant relationship with the victim; or
  - (ii) Was providing transportation, within the course of his or her employment, to the victim at the time of the offense.
- (2) Rape in the second degree is a class A felony.

### **WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.060 (West 2009). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(1) A person is guilty of rape in the third degree when, under circumstances not constituting rape in the first or second degrees, such person engages in sexual intercourse with another person, not married to the perpetrator:

(a) Where the victim did not consent as defined in RCW 9A.44.010(7), to sexual intercourse with the perpetrator and such lack of consent was clearly expressed by the victim's words or conduct, or

(b) Where there is threat of substantial unlawful harm to property rights of the victim.

(2) Rape in the third degree is a class C felony.

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

## **WASH. REV. CODE ANN. § 9A.44.100 (West 2009). INDECENT LIBERTIES**

(1) A person is guilty of indecent liberties when he or she knowingly causes another person who is not his or her spouse to have sexual contact with him or her or another:

(a) By forcible compulsion;

(b) When the other person is incapable of consent by reason of being mentally defective, mentally incapacitated, or physically helpless;

(c) When the victim is a person with a developmental disability and the perpetrator is a person who is not married to the victim and who:

(i) Has supervisory authority over the victim; or

(ii) Was providing transportation, within the course of his or her employment, to the victim at the time of the offense;

(d) When the perpetrator is a health care provider, the victim is a client or patient, and the sexual contact occurs during a treatment session, consultation, interview, or examination. It is an affirmative defense that the defendant must prove by a preponderance of the evidence that the client or patient consented to the sexual contact with the knowledge that the sexual contact was not for the purpose of treatment;

(e) When the victim is a resident of a facility for persons with a mental disorder or chemical dependency and the perpetrator is a person who is not married to the victim and has supervisory authority over the victim; or

(f) When the victim is a frail elder or vulnerable adult and the perpetrator is a person who is not married to the victim and who:

(i) Has a significant relationship with the victim; or

(ii) Was providing transportation, within the course of his or her employment, to the victim at the time of the offense.

(2)(a) Except as provided in (b) of this subsection, indecent liberties is a class B felony.

(b) Indecent liberties by forcible compulsion is a class A felony.

# WEST VIRGINIA

## W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-1 (West 2009). DEFINITION OF TERMS

In this article, unless a different meaning plainly is required:

(1) "Forcible compulsion" means:

(a) Physical force that overcomes such earnest resistance as might reasonably be expected under the circumstances; or

(b) Threat or intimidation, expressed or implied, placing a person in fear of immediate death or bodily injury to himself or herself or another person or in fear that he or she or another person will be kidnapped; or

(c) Fear by a person under sixteen years of age caused by intimidation, expressed or implied, by another person who is at least four years older than the victim.

For the purposes of this definition "resistance" includes physical resistance or any clear communication of the victim's lack of consent.

(2) "Married", for the purposes of this article in addition to its legal meaning, includes persons living together as husband and wife regardless of the legal status of their relationship.

(3) "Mentally defective" means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders that person incapable of appraising the nature of his or her conduct.

(4) "Mentally incapacitated" means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling his or her conduct as a result of the influence of a controlled or intoxicating substance administered to that person without his or her consent or as a result of any other act committed upon that person without his or her consent.

(5) "Physically helpless" means that a person is unconscious or for any reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

(6) "Sexual contact" means any intentional touching, either directly or through clothing, of the breasts, buttocks, anus or any part of the sex organs of another person, or intentional touching of any part of another person's body by the actor's sex organs, where the victim is not married to the actor and the touching is done for the purpose of gratifying the sexual desire of either party.

(7) "Sexual intercourse" means any act between persons involving penetration, however slight, of the female sex organ by the male sex organ or involving contact between the sex organs of one person and the mouth or anus of another person.

(8) "Sexual intrusion" means any act between persons involving penetration, however slight, of the female sex organ or of the anus of any person by an object for the purpose of degrading or humiliating the person so penetrated or for gratifying the sexual desire of either party.

(9) "Bodily injury" means substantial physical pain, illness or any impairment of physical condition.

(10) "Serious bodily injury" means bodily injury which creates a substantial risk of death, which causes serious or prolonged disfigurement, prolonged impairment of health or prolonged loss or impairment of the function of any bodily organ.

(11) "Deadly weapon" means any instrument, device or thing capable of inflicting death or serious bodily injury, and designed or specially adapted for use as a weapon, or possessed, carried or used as a weapon.

(12) "Forensic medical examination" means an examination provided to a possible victim of a violation of the provisions of this article by medical personnel qualified to gather evidence of the violation in a manner suitable for use in a court of law, to include: An examination for physical trauma; a determination of penetration or force; a patient interview; and the collection and evaluation of other evidence that is potentially relevant to the determination that a violation of the provisions of this article occurred and to the determination of the identity of the assailant.

## **W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-2 (West 2009). LACK OF CONSENT**

(a) Whether or not specifically stated, it is an element of every offense defined in this article that the sexual act was committed without the consent of the victim.

(b) Lack of consent results from:

(1) Forcible compulsion; or

(2) Incapacity to consent; or

(3) If the offense charged is sexual abuse, any circumstances in addition to the forcible compulsion or incapacity to consent in which the victim does not expressly or impliedly acquiesce in the actor's conduct.

(c) A person is deemed incapable of consent when such person is:

(1) Less than sixteen years old; or

(2) Mentally defective; or

(3) Mentally incapacitated; or

(4) Physically helpless.

**W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-3 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the first degree when:

(1) The person engages in sexual intercourse or sexual intrusion with another person and, in so doing:

(i) Inflicts serious bodily injury upon anyone; or

(ii) Employs a deadly weapon in the commission of the act; or

(2) The person, being fourteen years old or more, engages in sexual intercourse or sexual intrusion with another person who is younger than twelve years old and is not married to that person.

(b) Any person violating the provisions of this section is guilty of a felony and, upon conviction thereof, shall be imprisoned in a state correctional facility not less than fifteen nor more than thirty-five years, or fined not less than one thousand dollars nor more than ten thousand dollars and imprisoned in a state correctional facility not less than fifteen nor more than thirty-five years.

(c) Notwithstanding the provisions of subsection (b) of this section, the penalty for any person violating the provisions of subsection (a) of this section who is eighteen years of age or older and whose victim is younger than twelve years of age, shall be imprisonment in a state correctional facility for not less than twenty-five nor more than one hundred years and a fine of not less than five thousand dollars nor more than twenty-five thousand dollars.

**W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-4 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the second degree when:

(1) Such person engages in sexual intercourse or sexual intrusion with another person without the person's consent, and the lack of consent results from forcible compulsion; or

(2) Such person engages in sexual intercourse or sexual intrusion with another person who is physically helpless.

(b) Any person who violates the provisions of this section shall be guilty of a felony, and, upon conviction thereof, shall be imprisoned in the penitentiary not less than ten nor more

than twenty-five years, or fined not less than one thousand dollars nor more than ten thousand dollars and imprisoned in the penitentiary not less than ten nor more than twenty-five years.

**W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-5 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the third degree when:

(1) The person engages in sexual intercourse or sexual intrusion with another person who is mentally defective or mentally incapacitated; or

(2) The person, being sixteen years old or more, engages in sexual intercourse or sexual intrusion with another person who is less than sixteen years old and who is at least four years younger than the defendant and is not married to the defendant.

(b) Any person violating the provisions of this section is guilty of a felony and, upon conviction thereof, shall be imprisoned in a state correctional facility not less than one year nor more than five years, or fined not more than ten thousand dollars and imprisoned in a state correctional facility not less than one year nor more than five years.

**W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-7 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the first degree when:

(1) Such person subjects another person to sexual contact without their consent, and the lack of consent results from forcible compulsion; or

(2) Such person subjects another person to sexual contact who is physically helpless; or

(3) Such person, being fourteen years old or more, subjects another person to sexual contact who is younger than twelve years old.

(b) Any person who violates the provisions of this section shall be guilty of a felony, and, upon conviction thereof, shall be imprisoned in a state correctional facility not less than one year nor more than five years, or fined not more than ten thousand dollars and imprisoned in a state correctional facility not less than one year nor more than five years.

(c) Notwithstanding the provisions of subsection (b) of this section, the penalty for any person violating the provisions of subsection (a) of this section who is eighteen years of age or older and whose victim is younger than twelve years of age, shall be imprisonment for not less than five nor more than twenty-five years and fined not less than one thousand dollars nor more than five thousand dollars.

## **W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-8 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the second degree when such person subjects another person to sexual contact who is mentally defective or mentally incapacitated.

(b) Any person who violates the provisions of this section shall be guilty of a misdemeanor, and, upon conviction thereof, shall be confined in the county jail not more than twelve months, or fined not more than five hundred dollars and confined in the county jail not more than twelve months.

## **W. VA. CODE ANN. § 61-8B-9 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(a) A person is guilty of sexual abuse in the third degree when he subjects another person to sexual contact without the latter's consent, when such lack of consent is due to the victim's incapacity to consent by reason of being less than sixteen years old.

(b) In any prosecution under this section it is a defense that:

(1) The defendant was less than sixteen years old; or

(2) The defendant was less than four years older than the victim.

(c) Any person who violates the provisions of this section shall be guilty of a misdemeanor, and, upon conviction thereof, shall be confined in the county jail not more than ninety days, or fined not more than five hundred dollars and confined in the county jail not more than ninety days.

## **WISCONSIN**

### **WIS. STAT. ANN. § 940.225 (West 2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

**(1) First degree sexual assault.** Whoever does any of the following is guilty of a Class B felony:

(a) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with another person without consent of that person and causes pregnancy or great bodily harm to that person.



(b) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with another person without consent of that person by use or threat of use of a dangerous weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the victim reasonably to believe it to be a dangerous weapon.

(c) Is aided or abetted by one or more other persons and has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with another person without consent of that person by use or threat of force or violence.

**(2) Second degree sexual assault.** Whoever does any of the following is guilty of a Class C felony:

(a) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with another person without consent of that person by use or threat of force or violence.

(b) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with another person without consent of that person and causes injury, illness, disease or impairment of a sexual or reproductive organ, or mental anguish requiring psychiatric care for the victim.

(c) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with a person who suffers from a mental illness or deficiency which renders that person temporarily or permanently incapable of appraising the person's conduct, and the defendant knows of such condition.

(cm) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with a person who is under the influence of an intoxicant to a degree which renders that person incapable of giving consent if the defendant has actual knowledge that the person is incapable of giving consent and the defendant has the purpose to have sexual contact or sexual intercourse with the person while the person is incapable of giving consent.

(d) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with a person who the defendant knows is unconscious.

(f) Is aided or abetted by one or more other persons and has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with another person without the consent of that person.

(g) Is an employee of a facility or program under s. 940.295(2)(b), (c), (h) or (k) and has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with a person who is a patient or resident of the facility or program.

(h) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with an individual who is confined in a correctional institution if the actor is a correctional staff member. This paragraph does not apply if the individual with whom the actor has sexual contact or sexual intercourse is subject to prosecution for the sexual contact or sexual intercourse under this section.

(i) Has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with an individual who is on probation, parole, or extended supervision if the actor is a probation, parole, or extended supervision agent who supervises the individual, either directly or through a subordinate, in his or her capacity as a probation, parole, or extended supervision agent or who has influenced or has attempted to influence another probation, parole, or extended supervision agent's

---

RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

supervision of the individual. This paragraph does not apply if the individual with whom the actor has sexual contact or sexual intercourse is subject to prosecution for the sexual contact or sexual intercourse under this section.

(j) Is a licensee, employee, or nonclient resident of an entity, as defined in s. 48.685(1)(b) or 50.065(1)(c), and has sexual contact or sexual intercourse with a client of the entity.

**(3) Third degree sexual assault.** Whoever has sexual intercourse with a person without the consent of that person is guilty of a Class G felony. Whoever has sexual contact in the manner described in sub. (5)(b)2. or 3. with a person without the consent of that person is guilty of a Class G felony.

**(3m) Fourth degree sexual assault.** Except as provided in sub. (3), whoever has sexual contact with a person without the consent of that person is guilty of a Class A misdemeanor.

**(4) Consent.** “Consent”, as used in this section, means words or overt actions by a person who is competent to give informed consent indicating a freely given agreement to have sexual intercourse or sexual contact. Consent is not an issue in alleged violations of sub. (2)(c), (cm), (d), (g), (h), and (i). The following persons are presumed incapable of consent but the presumption may be rebutted by competent evidence, subject to the provisions of s. 972.11(2):

(b) A person suffering from a mental illness or defect which impairs capacity to appraise personal conduct.

(c) A person who is unconscious or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act.

**(5) Definitions.** In this section:

(abm) “Client” means an individual who receives direct care or treatment services from an entity.

(acm) “Correctional institution” means a jail or correctional facility, as defined in s. 961.01(12m), a juvenile correctional facility, as defined in s. 938.02(10p), or a juvenile detention facility, as defined in s. 938.02(10r).

(ad) “Correctional staff member” means an individual who works at a correctional institution, including a volunteer.

(ag) “Inpatient facility” has the meaning designated in s. 51.01(10).

(ai) “Intoxicant” means any alcohol beverage, controlled substance, controlled substance analog, or other drug or any combination thereof.

(ak) "Nonclient resident" means an individual who resides, or is expected to reside, at an entity, who is not a client of the entity, and who has, or is expected to have, regular, direct contact with the clients of the entity.

(am) "Patient" means any person who does any of the following:

1. Receives care or treatment from a facility or program under s. 940.295(2)(b), (c), (h) or (k), from an employee of a facility or program or from a person providing services under contract with a facility or program.
2. Arrives at a facility or program under s. 940.295(2)(b), (c), (h) or (k) for the purpose of receiving care or treatment from a facility or program under s. 940.295(2)(b), (c), (h) or (k), from an employee of a facility or program under s. 940.295(2)(b), (c), (h) or (k), or from a person providing services under contract with a facility or program under s. 940.295(2)(b), (c), (h) or (k).

(ar) "Resident" means any person who resides in a facility under s. 940.295(2)(b), (c), (h) or (k).

(b) "Sexual contact" means any of the following:

1. Any of the following types of intentional touching, whether direct or through clothing, if that intentional touching is either for the purpose of sexually degrading; or for the purpose of sexually humiliating the complainant or sexually arousing or gratifying the defendant or if the touching contains the elements of actual or attempted battery under s. 940.19(1):
  - a. Intentional touching by the defendant or, upon the defendant's instruction, by another person, by the use of any body part or object, of the complainant's intimate parts.
  - b. Intentional touching by the complainant, by the use of any body part or object, of the defendant's intimate parts or, if done upon the defendant's instructions, the intimate parts of another person.
2. Intentional penile ejaculation of ejaculate or intentional emission of urine or feces by the defendant or, upon the defendant's instruction, by another person upon any part of the body clothed or unclothed of the complainant if that ejaculation or emission is either for the purpose of sexually degrading or sexually humiliating the complainant or for the purpose of sexually arousing or gratifying the defendant.
3. For the purpose of sexually degrading or humiliating the complainant or sexually arousing or gratifying the defendant, intentionally causing the complainant to ejaculate or emit urine or feces on any part of the defendant's body, whether clothed or unclothed.

(c) "Sexual intercourse" includes the meaning assigned under s. 939.22(36) as well as cunnilingus, fellatio or anal intercourse between persons or any other intrusion, however slight, of any part of a person's body or of any object into the genital or anal opening either by the defendant or upon the defendant's instruction. The emission of semen is not required.

(d) "State treatment facility" has the meaning designated in s. 51.01(15).

**(6) Marriage not a bar to prosecution.** A defendant shall not be presumed to be incapable of violating this section because of marriage to the complainant.

**(7) Death of victim.** This section applies whether a victim is dead or alive at the time of the sexual contact or sexual intercourse.

## WYOMING

### WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-301 (2009). DEFINITIONS

(a) As used in this article:

(i) "Actor" means the person accused of criminal assault;

(ii) "Intimate parts" means the external genitalia, perineum, anus or pubes of any person or the breast of a female person;

(iii) "Physically helpless" means unconscious, asleep or otherwise physically unable to communicate unwillingness to act;

(iv) "Position of authority" means that position occupied by a parent, guardian, relative, household member, teacher, employer, custodian or any other person who, by reason of his position, is able to exercise significant influence over a person;

(v) "Sexual assault" means any act made criminal pursuant to W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304;

(vi) "Sexual contact" means touching, with the intention of sexual arousal, gratification or abuse, of the victim's intimate parts by the actor, or of the actor's intimate parts by the victim, or of the clothing covering the immediate area of the victim's or actor's intimate parts;

(vii) "Sexual intrusion" means:

(A) Any intrusion, however slight, by any object or any part of a person's body, except the mouth, tongue or penis, into the genital or anal opening of another person's body if that sexual intrusion can reasonably be construed as being for the purposes of sexual arousal, gratification or abuse; or

(B) Sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anilingus or anal intercourse with or without emission.

---

#### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(viii) "Victim" means the person alleged to have been subjected to sexual assault;

(ix) "This article" means W.S. 6-2-301 through 6-2-319.

## **WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-302 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(a) Any actor who inflicts sexual intrusion on a victim commits a sexual assault in the first degree if:

(i) The actor causes submission of the victim through the actual application, reasonably calculated to cause submission of the victim, of physical force or forcible confinement;

(ii) The actor causes submission of the victim by threat of death, serious bodily injury, extreme physical pain or kidnapping to be inflicted on anyone and the victim reasonably believes that the actor has the present ability to execute these threats;

(iii) The victim is physically helpless, and the actor knows or reasonably should know that the victim is physically helpless and that the victim has not consented; or

(iv) The actor knows or reasonably should know that the victim through a mental illness, mental deficiency or developmental disability is incapable of appraising the nature of the victim's conduct.

## **WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-303 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(a) Any actor who inflicts sexual intrusion on a victim commits sexual assault in the second degree if, under circumstances not constituting sexual assault in the first degree:

(i) The actor causes submission of the victim by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim or the victim's spouse, parents, brothers, sisters or children, and the victim reasonably believes the actor will execute this threat. "To retaliate" includes threats of kidnapping, death, serious bodily injury or extreme physical pain;

(ii) The actor causes submission of the victim by any means that would prevent resistance by a victim of ordinary resolution;

(iii) The actor administers, or knows that someone else administered to the victim, without the prior knowledge or consent of the victim, any substance which substantially impairs the victim's power to appraise or control his conduct;

(iv) The actor knows or should reasonably know that the victim submits erroneously believing the actor to be the victim's spouse;

(v) Repealed by Laws 2007, ch. 159, § 3.

(vi) The actor is in a position of authority over the victim and uses this position of authority to cause the victim to submit;

(vii) The actor is an employee, independent contractor or volunteer of a state, county, city or town, or privately operated adult or juvenile correctional system, including but not limited to jails, penal institutions, detention centers, juvenile residential or rehabilitative facilities, adult community correctional facilities, secure treatment facilities or work release facilities, and the victim is known or should be known by the actor to be a resident of such facility or under supervision of the correctional system; or

(viii) The actor inflicts sexual intrusion in treatment or examination of a victim for purposes or in a manner substantially inconsistent with reasonable medical practices.

(b) A person is guilty of sexual assault in the second degree if he subjects another person to sexual contact and causes serious bodily injury to the victim under any of the circumstances listed in W.S. 6-2-302(a)(i) through (iv) or paragraphs (a)(i) through (vii) of this section.

(c) Repealed by Laws 1997, ch. 135, § 2.

### **WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-304 (2009). SEXUAL ASSAULT IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

(a) An actor commits sexual assault in the third degree if, under circumstances not constituting sexual assault in the first or second degree:

(i), (ii) Repealed by Laws 2007, ch. 159, § 3.

(iii) The actor subjects a victim to sexual contact under any of the circumstances of W.S. 6-2-302(a)(i) through (iv) or 6-2-303(a)(i) through (vii) without inflicting sexual intrusion on the victim and without causing serious bodily injury to the victim.

### **WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-306 (2009). PENALTIES FOR SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) An actor convicted of sexual assault under W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304 who does not qualify under the criteria of subsection (b) or (d) of this section shall be punished as follows:

(i) Sexual assault in the first degree under W.S. 6-2-302 is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not less than five (5) years nor more than fifty (50) years;

(ii) Sexual assault in the second degree under W.S. 6-2-303 is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not less than two (2) years nor more than twenty (20) years;

(iii) Sexual assault in the third degree under W.S. 6-2-304 is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than fifteen (15) years;

(iv) Repealed by Laws 1997, ch. 135, § 2.

(b) An actor who is convicted of sexual assault under W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304, who has previously been convicted of any crime containing the same or similar elements as the crimes defined in W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304 and who does not qualify under the criteria of subsection (d) of this section shall be punished as follows:

(i), (ii) Repealed by Laws 2007, ch. 159, § 3.

(iii) Sexual assault in the first or second degree under W.S. 6-2-302 or 6-2-303 is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not less than twenty-five (25) years or for life; or

(iv) Sexual assault in the third degree under W.S. 6-2-304 is a felony punishable by imprisonment for not more than twenty (20) years.

(c) Repealed by Laws 2007, ch. 159, § 3.

(i), (ii) Repealed by Laws 2007, ch. 159, § 3.

(iii) Repealed by Laws 1997, ch. 135, § 2.

(d) An actor who is convicted of sexual assault under W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304, or sexual abuse of a minor under W.S. 6-2-316 through 6-2-317, shall be punished by life imprisonment without parole if the actor has two (2) or more previous convictions for any of the following designated offenses, which convictions resulted from charges separately brought and which arose out of separate occurrences in this state or elsewhere:

(i) A crime defined in W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304 or a criminal statute from another jurisdiction containing the same or similar elements as a crime defined by W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304.

(ii) Repealed by Laws 1997, ch. 135, § 2.

(iii) Repealed by Laws 2007, ch. 159, § 3.

(e) An actor who is convicted of sexual abuse of a minor under W.S. 6-2-314 or 6-2-315 shall be punished by life imprisonment without parole if the actor has one (1) or more previous convictions for a violation of W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304, 6-2-314 or 6-2-315, or a criminal statute containing the same or similar elements as the crimes defined by W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304, 6-2-314 or 6-2-315, which convictions resulted from charges separately brought and which arose out of separate occurrences in this state or elsewhere.

## **WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-307 (2009). EVIDENCE OF MARRIAGE AS DEFENSE**

(a) The fact that the actor and the victim are married to each other is not by itself a defense to a violation of W.S. 6-2-302(a)(i), (ii) or (iii) or 6-2-303(a)(i), (ii), (iii), (vi) or (vii).

(b) Consent of the victim is not a defense to a violation of W.S. 6-2-303(a)(vii) or 6-2-304(a)(iii).

## **WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-311 (2009). CORROBORATION UNNECESSARY**

Corroboration of a victim's testimony is not necessary to obtain a conviction for sexual assault.

## **WYO. STAT. ANN. § 6-2-313 (2009). SEXUAL BATTERY**

(a) Except under circumstances constituting a violation of W.S. 6-2-302 through 6-2-304, 6-2-314 through 6-2-317 or 6-2-502, an actor who unlawfully subjects another person to any sexual contact is guilty of sexual battery.

(b) Sexual battery is a misdemeanor punishable by imprisonment for not more than one (1) year, a fine of not more than one thousand dollars (\$1,000.00), or both.

## **U.S. TERRITORIES**

### **AMERICAN SAMOA**

## **AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3601 (2004). DEFINITIONS**

As used in this chapter:

(a) "Deviate sexual intercourse" means any sexual act involving the genitals of one person and the mouth, tongue, hand, or anus of another person.



(b) “Sexual contact” means any touching of the genitals or anus of any person, or the breast of any female person, or any such touching through the clothing, for the purpose of arousing or gratifying sexual desire of any person.

(c) “Sexual intercourse” means any penetration, however slight, of the female sex organ by the male sex organ, whether or not an emission results.

#### **AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3602 (2004). DETERMINATION OF MARRIAGE**

Persons living together as man and wife are married for purposes of this chapter, regard less of the legal status of their relationship otherwise. Spouses living apart under a decree of judicial separation are not married to one another for purposes of this chapter.

#### **AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3603 (2004). MISTAKE AS TO INCAPACITY OR AGE**

(a) Whenever in this chapter the criminality of conduct depends upon a victim’s being in capacitated, no crime is committed if the defendant reasonably believed that the victim consented to the act. The defendant has the burden of injecting the issue of belief as to capacity and consent.

(b) Whenever in this chapter the criminality of conduct depends upon a child’s being under the age of 14, it is no defense that the defendant believed the child to be 14 years old or older.

#### **AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3604 (2004). RAPE**

(a) A person commits the crime of rape if:

(1) he has sexual intercourse with another person without that person’s consent by the use of forcible compulsion; or

(2) he has sexual intercourse with another person who is 16 years of age or less.

(b) Rape is a class B felony unless in the course of it the actor inflicts serious physical injury on any person or displays a deadly weapon in a threatening manner, then rape is a class A felony.

**AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3610 (2004). SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) A person commits the crime of sexual assault if he has sexual intercourse with another person who is incapacitated or 16 years of age or less.

(b) Sexual assault is a class C felony unless in the course of it the actor inflicts serious physical injury on any person or displays a deadly weapon in a threatening manner, then the crime is a class B felony.

**AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3611 (2004). SODOMY**

(a) A person commits the crime of sodomy if:

(1) he has deviate sexual intercourse with another person without that person's consent or by the use of forcible compulsion; or

(2) he has deviate sexual intercourse with another person who is 16 years of age or less.

(b) Sodomy is a class B felony unless in the course of it the actor inflicts serious physical injury on any person or displays a deadly weapon, then sodomy is a class A felony.

**AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3612 (2004). DEVIATE SEXUAL ASSAULT**

(a) A person commits the crime of deviate sexual assault if he has deviate sexual inter course with another person without consent or who is incapacitated or who is 16 years of age or less.

(b) Deviate sexual assault is a class C felony unless in the course of it the actor inflicts serious physical injury on any person or dis plays a deadly weapon in a threatening manner, then the crime is a class B felony.

**AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3615 (2004). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

(a) A person commits the crime of sexual abuse in the first degree if:

(1) he subjects another person to sexual contact without that person's consent or by the use of forcible compulsion; or

(2) he subjects another person who is 16 years of age or less to sexual contact.

(b) Sexual abuse in the first degree is a class D felony unless in the course of it the actor inflicts serious physical harm on any person or displays a deadly weapon in a threatening manner, then the crime is a class C felony.

**AMERICAN SAMOA CODE ANN. § 46.3616 (2004). SEXUAL ABUSE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

(a) A person commits the crime of sexual abuse in the second degree if he subjects another person to sexual contact without that person's consent.

(b) Sexual abuse in the second degree is a class B misdemeanor unless in the course of it the actor displays a deadly weapon in a threatening manner, then the crime is a class A misdemeanor.

## **GUAM**

**9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.10 (2009). DEFINITIONS**

(a) As used in this Chapter:

(1) Actor means a person accused of criminal sexual conduct;

(2) Force or Coercion includes but is not limited to any of the following circumstances:

(i) when the actor overcomes the victim through the actual application of physical force or physical violence;

(ii) when the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to use force or violence on the victim and the victim believes that the actor has the present ability to execute these threats;

(iii) when the actor coerces the victim to submit by threatening to retaliate in the future against the victim or any other person and the victim believes that the actor has the ability to execute this threat.

As used in this Subsection, to retaliate includes threats of physical punishment, kidnapping or extortion;

(iv) when the actor engages in the medical treatment or examination of the victim in a manner or for purposes which are medically recognized as unethical or unacceptable; or

(v) when the actor, through concealment or by the element of surprise, is able to overcome the victim.

(3) Intimate Parts includes the primary genital area, groin, inner thigh, buttock or breast of a human being;

(4) Mentally Defective means that a person suffers from a mental disease or defect which renders that person temporary or permanently incapable of appraising the nature of his or her conduct;

(5) Mentally Incapacitated means that a person is rendered temporarily incapable of appraising or controlling his or her conduct due to the influence of a narcotic, anesthetic or other substance administered to that person without his or her consent, or due to any other act committed upon that person without his or her consent;

(6) Physically Helpless means that a person is unconscious, asleep or for any other reason is physically unable to communicate unwillingness to an act;

(7) Personal Injury means bodily injury, disfigurement, mental anguish, chronic pain, pregnancy, disease or loss or impairment of a sexual or reproductive organ;

(8) Sexual Contact includes the intentional touching of the victim's or actor's intimate parts or the intentional touching of the clothing covering the immediate area of the victim's or actor's intimate parts, if that intentional touching can reasonably be construed as being for the purpose of sexual arousal or gratification;

(9) Sexual Penetration means sexual intercourse, cunnilingus, fellatio, anal intercourse or any other intrusion, however slight, of any part of a person's body or of any object into the genital or anal openings of another person's body, but emission of semen is not required; and

(10) Victim means the person alleging to have been subjected to criminal sexual conduct.

(b) Whenever in this Chapter the criminality of conduct depends on a child's being below the age of fourteen (14), it is no defense that the defendant reasonably believed the child to be fourteen (14) or older. Whenever in this Chapter the criminality of conduct depends on a

child's being below a specified age older than fourteen (14), it is an affirmative defense that the defendant reasonably believed the child to be of that age or above.

## **9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.15 (2009). FIRST DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT**

(a) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the first degree if he or she engages in sexual penetration with the victim and if any of the following circumstances exists:

(1) the victim is under fourteen (14) years of age;

(2) the victim is at least fourteen (14) but less than sixteen (16) years of age and the actor is a member of the same household as the victim, the actor is related to the victim by blood or affinity to the fourth degree to the victim, or the actor is in a position of authority over the victim and used this authority to coerce the victim to submit;

(3) sexual penetration occurs under circumstances involving the commission of any other felony;

(4) the actor is aided or abetted by one or more other persons and either of the following circumstances exists:

(i) the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless; or

(ii) the actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the sexual penetration.

(5) the actor is armed with a weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead the victim to reasonably believe it to be a weapon;

(6) the actor causes personal injury to the victim and force or coercion is used to accomplish sexual penetration; and

(7) the actor causes personal injury to the victim, and the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless.

(b) Criminal sexual conduct in the first degree is a felony in the first degree. Any person convicted of criminal sexual conduct under §25.15(a) shall be sentenced to a minimum of fifteen (15) years imprisonment, and may be sentenced to a maximum of life imprisonment without the possibility of parole. Any person convicted of criminal sexual conduct in the first degree shall not be eligible for work release or educational programs outside the confines of prison nor shall the provisions under §80.31 apply.

## **9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.20 (2009). SECOND DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT**

(a) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the second degree if the person engages in sexual contact with another person and if any of the following circumstances exists:

(1) that other person is under fourteen (14) years of age;

(2) that other person is at least fourteen (14) but less than sixteen (16) years of age and the actor is a member of the same household as the victim, or is related by blood or affinity to the fourth degree to the victim, or is in a position of authority over the victim and the actor used this authority to coerce the victim to submit;

(3) sexual contact occurs under circumstances involving the commission of any other felony;

(4) the actor is aided or abetted by one or more other persons and either of the following circumstances exists:

(i) the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless; or

(ii) the actor uses force or coercion to accomplish the sexual contact.

(5) the actor is armed with a weapon or any article used or fashioned in a manner to lead a person to reasonably believe it to be a weapon;

(6) the actor causes personal injury to the victim and force or coercion is used to accomplish the sexual contact; and

(7) the actor causes personal injury to the victim and the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless.

(b) Criminal sexual conduct in the second degree is a felony in the first degree but a person convicted of criminal sexual conduct in the second degree who receives a sentence of imprisonment shall not be eligible for work release or educational programs outside the confines of prison.

## **9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.25 (2009). THIRD DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT**

(a) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the third degree if the person engages in sexual penetration with another person and if any of the following circumstances exists:

---

### RAPE AND SEXUAL ASSAULT LAWS

(1) that other person is at least fourteen (14) years of age and under sixteen (16) years of age;

(2) force or coercion is used to accomplish the sexual penetration; and

(3) the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless.

(b) Criminal sexual conduct in the third degree is a felony of the second degree.

### **9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.30 (2009). FOURTH DEGREE CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT**

(a) A person is guilty of criminal sexual conduct in the fourth degree if he or she engages in sexual contact with another person and if either of the following circumstances exists:

(1) force or coercion is used to accomplish the sexual contact;

(2) the actor knows or has reason to know that the victim is mentally defective, mentally incapacitated or physically helpless.

(b) Criminal sexual conduct in the fourth degree is a felony of the third degree, except for first time offenders it is a misdemeanor.

### **9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.35 (2009). ASSAULT WITH INTENT TO COMMIT CRIMINAL SEXUAL CONDUCT**

Assault with intent to commit criminal sexual conduct involving penetration is a felony in a third degree.

### **9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.40 (2009). VICTIM'S TESTIMONY NEED NOT BE CORROBORATED**

The testimony of a victim need not be corroborated in prosecutions under §§ 25.15 through 25.35.

## **9 GUAM CODE ANN. § 25.45 (2009). RESISTANCE NOT REQUIRED**

A victim need not resist the actor for a proper prosecution under §§ 25.15 through 25.35.

## **NORTHERN MARIANA ISLAND**

### **4.1 CMC § 404 (2008). RAPE DEFINED**

Rape is an act of sexual intercourse with a person not the spouse of the perpetrator, under any of the following circumstances:

- (a) where it is accomplished against a person's will by means of force or fear of immediate and unlawful injury on the person or upon another;
- (b) where a person is incapable, through unsoundness of mind, whether temporary or permanent, of giving legal consent;
- (c) where a person is prevented from resisting by any intoxicating narcotic, or anaesthetic substance, administered by or with the privity of the accused; or
- (d) where a person is at the time unconscious of the nature of the act, and this is known to the accused.

### **4.1 CMC § 406 (2008). PENALTY FOR RAPE**

- (a) A person convicted of rape or rape of spouse shall be punished by imprisonment for not more than ten (10) years.
- (b) Special Circumstances. If any of the following special circumstances has been charged and specially found to be true, the defendant shall be punished by imprisonment for a minimum term of two ( 2 ) years, and may be punished for a maximum term of twenty (20) years:
  - (1) when serious bodily injury results;
  - (2) when serious psychological injury results;



(3) when a dangerous weapon is used by the defendant or an accomplice with the intent to cause the victim to submit to the sexual assault; or

(4) when the defendant has voluntarily acted in concert with another person in committing the rape.

#### **4.I CMC § 407 (2008). SODOMY DEFINED**

Sodomy is sexual conduct consisting of contact between the penis of one person and the anus of another person.

#### **4.I CMC § 408 (2008). CRIMINAL SODOMY DEFINED AND PENALIZED**

(a) Any person who participates in an act of sodomy with another person against the other person's will by means of force, violence, duress, menace, or fear of immediate and unlawful bodily injury on the victim or another person shall be punished by imprisonment for not more than ten (10) years.

(b) Any person who participates in an act of sodomy with another person who is under eighteen (18) years of age shall be punished by imprisonment for not more than five (5) years.

#### **4.I CMC § 410 (2008). CRIMINAL ORAL COPULATION DEFINED AND PENALIZED**

(a) Any person who participates in an act of oral copulation with another person against the other person's will by means of force, violence, duress, menace, or fear of immediate and unlawful bodily injury on the victim or another person shall be punished by imprisonment for not more than ten (10) years.

(b) Any person who participates in an act of oral copulation with another person who is under eighteen (18) years of age shall be punished by imprisonment for not more than five (5) years.

## **PUERTO RICO**

### **33 LAWS OF PUERTO RICO ANN. § 4061 (2004). RAPE**

Every person who has carnal intercourse with a female who is not his wife, in any of the following circumstances shall be punished by imprisonment, as provided hereinafter:

(a) If the female is under fourteen (14) years of age

(b) If she is incapable, through illness or unsoundness of mind, whether temporary or permanent to give legal consent.

(c) If she has been compelled to the act by the use of irresistible physical force or threats of grave and immediate bodily harm, accompanied by apparent power of execution; or by overcoming or diminishing her capacity to resist substantially, without her knowledge, by means of hypnosis, narcotics, depressant or stimulant drugs or similar substances or means.

(d) If at the time of committing the act, she was not aware of its nature and this circumstance is [was] known to the accused.

(e) If she submits in the belief that the accused is her husband, and this belief is induced by any artifice, pretense or concealment put into practice by the accused.

The penalty to be imposed for this crime, except in the case of the crime referred to in subsection (c) of this section, shall be imprisonment for a fixed term of fifteen (15) years. Should there be aggravating circumstances, the fixed penalty established may be increased to a maximum of twenty-five (25) years; if there should be extenuating circumstances, it may be reduced to a minimum of ten (10) years.

The penalty to be imposed for the crime referred to in subsection (c) of this section shall be imprisonment for a fixed term of thirty (30) years. Should there be aggravating circumstances, the fixed penalty established may be increased to a maximum of fifty (50) years; if there should be extenuating circumstances, it may be reduced to a minimum of twenty (20) years.

In case the crime described in subsection (c) of this section is committed while the author of the crime has entered the home of the victim, or the house or residential building where the victim is, or the yard, land or parking area thereof, the penalty for the crime shall be imprisonment for a fixed term of sixty (60) years.

Should there be aggravating circumstances, the fixed penalty established may be increased to a maximum of ninety-nine (99) years; should there be extenuating circumstances, it may be reduced to a minimum of forty (40) years.

The court may impose the penalty of restitution in addition to the penalty of imprisonment established in any of the aforementioned cases, or both penalties.

### **33 LAWS OF PUERTO RICO ANN. § 4065 (2004). SODOMY**

Any person who has sexual intercourse with a person of his same sex or commits the crime against nature with a human being shall be punished by imprisonment for a fixed term of ten (10) years. Should there be aggravating circumstances, the fixed penalty may be increased to a maximum of twelve (12) years; if there should be extenuating circumstances, it may be reduced to a minimum of six (6) years.

The penalty of imprisonment shall be for a fixed term of twelve (12) years when the act of sodomy is committed in any of the following circumstances:

(a) If the victim is under fourteen (14) years of age.

(b) If the victim has been compelled to the act by the use of irresistible force, or threat of grave and immediate bodily harm, accompanied by apparent power of execution; or by overcoming or diminishing his will to resist, substantially, without his knowledge, by means of hypnosis, narcotics, depressants or stimulants, or similar substances or means.

(c) If the victim, due to illness or temporary or permanent mental deficiency, is not capable of understanding the nature of the act at the moment it is committed.

In any of the three preceding circumstances [subsections (a)-(c) of this section], the fixed penalty established may be increased to a maximum of twenty (20) years should there be aggravating factors, or reduced to a minimum of eight (8) years should there be extenuating circumstances.

The court may impose the penalty of restitution in addition to the penalty of imprisonment established in any of the aforementioned circumstances, or both penalties.

## **VIRGIN ISLANDS**

## **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1699 (2005). DEFINITIONS**

As used in this chapter, unless the context clearly indicates otherwise:

- (a) “perpetrator” means a person accused of rape or unlawful sexual contact
- (b) “personal injury” means serious bodily injury, disfigurement, chronic pain, disease, or loss or impairment of a sexual or reproductive organ.
- (c) “sexual contact” means the intentional touching of a person's intimate parts, whether directly or through clothing, to arouse or to gratify the sexual desires of any person. The term “intimate parts” means the primary genital area, groin, inner thighs, buttocks, or breasts of a person.
- (d) “sexual intercourse” means vaginal intercourse or any insertion, however slight, of a hand, finger or object into the vagina, vulva, or labia, excluding such insertion for medical treatment or examination.
- (e) “sodomy” means carnal knowledge of any person by the mouth, i.e., cunnilingus or fellatio; or by the anus; or by submission to the same; or by any insertion, however slight, of any object into a person's anus, excluding such insertion for medical treatment or examination.
- (f) “victim” means the person alleging to have been subjected to rape or unlawful sexual contact.

## **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1700 (2005). AGGRAVATED RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

- (a) Whoever perpetrates an act of sexual intercourse or sodomy with a person not the perpetrator's spouse:
  - (1) Who is under the age of thirteen, or...
  - (2) who is under sixteen years of age residing in the same household as the perpetrator, and force, intimidation, or the perpetrator's position of authority over the victim is used to accomplish the sexual act; or
- (b) Whoever causes personal injury to a victim as the result of an act of rape as set forth in section 1701 of this title; or
- (c) Whoever uses a deadly weapon during the commission of an act of rape as set forth in section 1701—

is guilty of aggravated rape in the first degree and shall be imprisoned for life or for any term of years, but not less than 15 years. Notwithstanding the provisions of Title 5, chapters 313, 405 and 407, Virgin Islands Code, or any other provisions of law, imposition or execution of the fifteen-year minimum period of incarceration shall not be suspended; neither shall probation, parole, or any other form of release be granted for this minimum period of incarceration.

Whoever is convicted of a second or subsequent offense of aggravated rape in the first degree shall be punished by imprisonment for life or for any term of years, but not less than 25 years. Notwithstanding the provisions of Title 5, chapters 313, 405 and 407, Virgin Islands Code, or any other provision of law, imposition or execution of the twenty-five year minimum period of incarceration shall not be suspended; neither shall probation, parole, or any other form of release be granted for this minimum period of incarceration.

(d) Whoever is convicted of attempted aggravated rape in the first degree shall be punished by imprisonment for not more than 25 years, but not less than 7 years. Notwithstanding the provisions of Title 5, chapters 313, 405 and 407, or any other provision of law, imposition or execution of the seven-year period of incarceration shall not be suspended, nor shall probation, parole or another form of release be granted for this minimum period of incarceration.

(e) Whoever is found guilty of an offense in this section shall receive a psychiatric evaluation and participate in psychosocial counseling.

#### **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1700A (2005). AGGRAVATED RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

**(a)** Whoever perpetrates an act of sexual intercourse or sodomy with a person who is under eighteen years but thirteen years or older and not the perpetrator's spouse, or by force, intimidation, or the perpetrator's position of authority over the victim is used to accomplish the sexual act, is guilty of aggravated rape in the second degree and shall be imprisoned for life or for any term in years, but not less than 10 years. "Position of authority" shall include, but not be exclusive to the following: an employer, youth leader, scout leader, coach, teacher, counselor, school administrator, religious leader, doctor, nurse, psychologist, guardian ad litem, baby sitter, or substantially similar position, and a police officer or probation officer other than when the officer is exercising custodial control over a minor.

**(b)** Whoever is convicted of a second or subsequent offense of aggravated rape in the second degree shall be punished by imprisonment for life or for any term of years, but not less than 20 years. Notwithstanding the provisions of title 5, chapters 313, 405 and 407 of this Code, or of any other law, imposition or execution of the

twenty-year minimum period of incarceration shall not be suspended; nor shall probation, parole, or any other form of release be granted for the minimum period of incarceration prescribed in this section.

**(c)** Whoever is convicted of attempted aggravated rape in the second degree shall be punished by imprisonment for not more than 25 years, but not less than 5 years. Notwithstanding the provisions of title 5, chapters 313, 405 and 407, or any other provision of law, imposition or execution of the five-year minimum period of incarceration shall not be suspended, nor shall probation, parole or any other form of release be granted for this minimum period of incarceration.

**(d)** Whoever is convicted of an offense under this section shall receive a psychiatric evaluation and participate in psychosocial counseling.

#### **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1701 (2005). RAPE IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

Whoever perpetrates an act of sexual intercourse or sodomy with a person –

**(1)** when through idiocy, imbecility or any unsoundness of mind, either temporary or permanent, the person is incapable of giving consent, or, by reason of mental or physical weakness or immaturity or any bodily ailment, the person does not offer resistance;

**(2)** when the person's resistance is forcibly overcome

**(3)** when the person's resistance is prevented by fear of immediate and great bodily harm which the person has reasonable cause to believe will be inflicted upon the person

**(4)** when the person's resistance is prevented by stupor or weakness of mind produced by an intoxicating, narcotic or anaesthetic agent, or when the person is known by the defendant to be in such state of stupor or weakness of mind from any cause; or

**(5)** when the person is, at the time, unconscious of the nature of the act and this is known to the defendant—

is guilty of rape in the first degree and shall be imprisoned not less than 10 years nor more than 30 years. Notwithstanding the provisions of Title 5, chapters 313, 405 and 407, Virgin Islands Code, or any other provision of law, imposition or execution of this ten-year minimum period of incarceration shall not be suspended;

neither shall probation, parole, or any other form of release be granted for this minimum period of incarceration.

Whoever is convicted of a second or subsequent offense of rape in the first degree shall be punished by imprisonment for life or for any term of years, but not less than 10 years. Notwithstanding the provisions of Title 5, chapters 313, 405 and 407, Virgin Islands Code, or any other provision of law, imposition or execution of the ten-year minimum period of incarceration shall not be suspended; neither shall probation, parole, or any other form of release be granted for this minimum period of incarceration.

#### **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1702 (2005). RAPE IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

**(a)** Any person over 18 years of age who perpetrates under circumstances not amounting to rape in the first degree, an act of sexual intercourse or sodomy with a person not the perpetrator's spouse who is at least 16 years but less than 18 years of age, and the perpetrator is 5 years or older than the victim, is guilty of rape in the second degree and shall be imprisoned not more than 10 years.

**(b)** Whoever is convicted of any offense under this section shall receive a psychiatric evaluation and participate in psychosocial counseling.

#### **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1703 (2005). RAPE IN THE THIRD DEGREE**

Any person under 18 years of age but over 16 years of age who perpetrates an act of sexual intercourse or sodomy with a person not the perpetrator's spouse who is under 16 years of age but over 13 years of age, under circumstances not amounting to rape in the first degree, is guilty of rape in the third degree and shall be subject to the jurisdiction of the Family Division of the Superior Court pursuant to Title 4, Chapter 11, Virgin Islands Code. In lieu of a term of detention, the court, in its discretion, may recommend appropriate treatment, counseling or family planning.

#### **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1704 (2005). PENETRATION NECESSARY TO CONSTITUTE RAPE**

Any sexual penetration, however slight, is sufficient to complete the crime.

#### **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1708 (2005). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE FIRST DEGREE**

A person who engages in sexual contact with a person not the perpetrator's spouse

- (1) when force or coercion is used to accomplish the sexual contact
- (2) when the other person is under thirteen years of age
- (3) when the other person is under sixteen years of age residing in the same household as the perpetrator, and force, intimidation or the perpetrator's position of authority over the victim is used to accomplish the sexual contact
- (4) when the other person is threatened or placed in fear of imminent and serious bodily injury;
- (5) when the other person's ability to consent to or resist the contact has been substantially impaired by an intoxicating, narcotic or anesthetic agent; or
- (6) when the other person is unconscious or physically helpless, or that person's mental defect or incapacity is known to the perpetrator—is guilty of unlawful sexual contact and shall be imprisoned not more than 15 years.

#### **14 VIRGIN ISLANDS CODE § 1709 (2005). UNLAWFUL SEXUAL CONTACT IN THE SECOND DEGREE**

A person over eighteen years of age who engages in sexual contact with a person not the perpetrator's spouse who is over thirteen but under sixteen years of age is guilty of unlawful sexual contact in the second degree and shall be imprisoned not more than 1 year.

### **FEDERAL**

#### **18 U.S.C.A. § 2241 (West 2009). AGGRAVATED SEXUAL ABUSE**

(a) By Force or Threat. - Whoever, in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly causes another person to engage in a sexual act -



(1) by using force against that other person; or

(2) by threatening or placing that other person in fear that any person will be subjected to death, serious bodily injury, or kidnapping; or attempts to do so, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned for any term of years or life, or both.

(b) By Other Means. - Whoever, in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly -

(1) renders another person unconscious and thereby engages in a sexual act with that other person; or

(2) administers to another person by force or threat of force, or without the knowledge or permission of that person, a drug, intoxicant, or other similar substance and thereby -

(A) substantially impairs the ability of that other person to appraise or control conduct; and

(B) engages in a sexual act with that other person; or attempts to do so, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned for any term of years or life, or both.

(c) With Children. - Whoever crosses a State line with intent to engage in a sexual act with a person who has not attained the age of 12 years, or in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly engages in a sexual act with another person who has not attained the age of 12 years, or knowingly engages in a sexual act under the circumstances described in subsections (a) and (b) with another person who has attained the age of 12 years but has not attained the age of 16 years (and is at least 4 years younger than the person so engaging), or attempts to do so, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned for any term of years or life, or both. If the defendant has previously been convicted of another Federal offense under this subsection, or of a State offense that would have been an offense under either such provision had the offense occurred in a Federal prison, unless the death penalty is imposed, the defendant shall be sentenced to life in prison.

(d) State of Mind Proof Requirement. - In a prosecution under subsection (c) of this section, the Government need not prove that the defendant knew that the other person engaging in the sexual act had not attained the age of 12 years.

## **18 U.S.C.A. § 2242 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE**

Whoever, in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly -

(1) causes another person to engage in a sexual act by threatening or placing that other person in fear (other than by threatening or placing that other person in fear that any person will be subjected to death, serious bodily injury, or kidnapping); or

(2) engages in a sexual act with another person if that other person is -

(A) incapable of appraising the nature of the conduct; or

(B) physically incapable of declining participation in, or communicating unwillingness to engage in, that sexual act; or attempts to do so, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than 20 years, or both.

### **18 U.S.C.A. § 2243 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE OF A MINOR OR WARD**

(a) Of a Minor. - Whoever, in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly engages in a sexual act with another person who -

(1) has attained the age of 12 years but has not attained the age of 16 years; and

(2) is at least four years younger than the person so engaging; or attempts to do so, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than 15 years, or both.

(b) Of a Ward. - Whoever, in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly engages in a sexual act with another person who is -

(1) in official detention; and

(2) under the custodial, supervisory, or disciplinary authority of the person so engaging; or attempts to do so, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than one year, or both.

(c) Defenses. - (1) In a prosecution under subsection (a) of this section, it is a defense, which the defendant must establish by a preponderance of the evidence, that the defendant reasonably believed that the other person had attained the age of 16 years. (2) In a prosecution under this section, it is a defense, which the defendant must establish by a preponderance of the evidence, that the persons engaging in the sexual act were at that time married to each other.

(d) State of Mind Proof Requirement. - In a prosecution under subsection (a) of this section, the Government need not prove that the defendant knew-

(1) the age of the other person engaging in the sexual act; or

(2) that the requisite age difference existed between the persons so engaging.

## **18 U.S.C.A. § 2244 (West 2009). ABUSIVE SEXUAL CONTACT**

(a) Sexual Conduct in Circumstances Where Sexual Acts Are Punished by This Chapter. - Whoever, in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly engages in or causes sexual contact with or by another person, if so to do would violate -

(1) section 2241 of this title had the sexual contact been a sexual act, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than ten years, or both;

(2) section 2242 of this title had the sexual contact been a sexual act, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than three years, or both;

(3) subsection (a) of section 2243 of this title had the sexual contact been a sexual act, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than two years, or both; or

(4) subsection (b) of section 2243 of this title had the sexual contact been a sexual act, shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than six months, or both.

(b) In Other Circumstances. - Whoever, in the special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of the United States or in a Federal prison, knowingly engages in sexual contact with another person without that other person's permission shall be fined under this title, imprisoned not more than six months, or both.

(c) Offenses Involving Young Children. - If the sexual contact that violates this section is with an individual who has not attained the age of 12 years, the maximum term of imprisonment that may be imposed for the offense shall be twice that otherwise provided in this section.

## **18 U.S.C.A. § 2245 (West 2009). SEXUAL ABUSE RESULTING IN DEATH**

A person who, in the course of an offense under this chapter, engages in conduct that results in the death of a person, shall be punished by death or imprisoned for any term of years or for life.

## **18 U.S.C.A. § 2246 (West 2009). DEFINITIONS FOR CHAPTER**

As used in this chapter -

(1) the term "prison" means a correctional, detention, or penal facility;

(2) the term "sexual act" means -

(A) contact between the penis and the vulva or the penis and the anus, and for purposes of this subparagraph contact involving the penis occurs upon penetration, however slight;

(B) contact between the mouth and the penis, the mouth and the vulva, or the mouth and the anus;

(C) the penetration, however slight, of the anal or genital opening of another by a hand or finger or by any object, with an intent to abuse, humiliate, harass, degrade, or arouse or gratify the sexual desire of any person; or

(D) the intentional touching, not through the clothing, of the genitalia of another person who has not attained the age of 16 years with an intent to abuse, humiliate, harass, degrade, or arouse or gratify the sexual desire of any person;

(3) the term "sexual contact" means the intentional touching, either directly or through the clothing, of the genitalia, anus, groin, breast, inner thigh, or buttocks of any person with an intent to abuse, humiliate, harass, degrade, or arouse or gratify the sexual desire of any person;

(4) the term "serious bodily injury" means bodily injury that involves a substantial risk of death, unconsciousness, extreme physical pain, protracted and obvious disfigurement, or protracted loss or impairment of the function of a bodily member, organ, or mental faculty;

(5) the term "official detention" means -

(A) detention by a Federal officer or employee, or under the direction of a Federal officer or employee, following arrest for an offense; following surrender in lieu of arrest for an offense; following a charge or conviction of an offense, or an allegation or finding of juvenile delinquency; following commitment as a material witness; following civil commitment in lieu of criminal proceedings or pending resumption of criminal proceedings that are being held in abeyance, or pending extradition, deportation, or exclusion; or

(B) custody by a Federal officer or employee, or under the direction of a Federal officer or employee, for purposes incident to any detention described in

subparagraph (A) of this paragraph, including transportation, medical diagnosis or treatment, court appearance, work, and recreation; but does not include supervision or other control (other than custody during specified hours or days) after release on bail, probation, or parole, or after release following a finding of juvenile delinquency.

(6) the term "State" means a State of the United States, the District of Columbia, and any commonwealth, possession, or territory of the United States.

## **18 U.S.C.A. § 2247 (West 2009). REPEAT OFFENDERS**

(a) Maximum Term of Imprisonment. - The maximum term of imprisonment for a violation of this chapter after a prior sex offense conviction shall be twice the term otherwise provided by this chapter.

(b) Prior Sex Offense Conviction Defined. - In this section, the term "prior sex offense conviction" has the meaning given that term in section 2426(b).

## **18 U.S.C.A. § 2248 (West 2009). MANDATORY RESTITUTION**

(a) In General. - Notwithstanding section 3663 or 3663A, and in addition to any other civil or criminal penalty authorized by law, the court shall order restitution for any offense under this chapter.

(b) Scope and Nature of Order. -

(1) Directions. - The order of restitution under this section shall direct the defendant to pay to the victim (through the appropriate court mechanism) the full amount of the victim's losses as determined by the court pursuant to paragraph

(2) Enforcement. - An order of restitution under this section shall be issued and enforced in accordance with section 3664 in the same manner as an order under section 3663A.

(3) Definition. - For purposes of this subsection, the term "full amount of the victim's losses" includes any costs incurred by the victim for -

(A) medical services relating to physical, psychiatric, or psychological care;

(B) physical and occupational therapy or rehabilitation;

- (C) necessary transportation, temporary housing, and child care expenses;
- (D) lost income;
- (E) attorneys' fees, plus any costs incurred in obtaining a civil protection order; and
- (F) any other losses suffered by the victim as a proximate result of the offense.

(4) Order mandatory. -

(A) The issuance of a restitution order under this section is mandatory.

(B) A court may not decline to issue an order under this section because of -

(i) the economic circumstances of the defendant; or

(ii) the fact that a victim has, or is entitled to, receive compensation for his or her injuries from the proceeds of insurance or any other source.

(c) Definition. - For purposes of this section, the term "victim" means the individual harmed as a result of a commission of a crime under this chapter, including, in the case of a victim who is under 18 years of age, incompetent, incapacitated, or deceased, the legal guardian of the victim or representative of the victim's estate, another family member, or any other person appointed as suitable by the court, but in no event shall the defendant be named as such representative or guardian.